

# Mercy Girls: Monster Catchers

By JazmynMoon21

Submitted: March 10, 2007

Updated: October 22, 2007

*Welcome to Mercedes' Academy for Gifted Girls. Here, majic isn't just a word, it's the curriculum.*

Provided by Fanart Central.

<http://www.fanart-central.net/stories/user/JazmynMoon21/44050/Mercy-Girls-Monster-Catchers>

<b>Chapter 1 - Welcome to The School of Your Dreams</b>	<b>3</b>
<b>Chapter 2 - pilot</b>	<b>5</b>
<b>Chapter 3 - Water, Fire, Metal, Blood and Masks</b>	<b>15</b>
<b>Chapter 4 - More charas</b>	<b>22</b>
<b>Chapter 5 - More charas 3</b>	<b>24</b>
<b>Chapter 6 - Recollection of Ethics</b>	<b>26</b>
<b>Chapter 7 - Aishiteru Neesama/ Amo mi Ate/ I love you, Big Sis</b>	<b>33</b>
<b>Chapter 8 - Never Again</b>	<b>43</b>
<b>Chapter 9 - Fighting Spirit</b>	<b>51</b>
<b>Chapter 10 - Butterfly Blue</b>	<b>59</b>
<b>Chapter 11 - Runny Babbit</b>	<b>68</b>
<b>Chapter 12 - Brother-Sister Love; Alternate Life</b>	<b>76</b>
<b>Chapter 13 - this isn't a chapter. LIVE ACTION!!!</b>	<b>84</b>
<b>Chapter 14 - Somethings...</b>	<b>85</b>
<b>Chapter 15 - Everything</b>	<b>90</b>
<b>Chapter 16 - Satifaction</b>	<b>98</b>
<b>Chapter 17 - Eyes Like Yours</b>	<b>106</b>
<b>Chapter 18 - Belly of the Beast</b>	<b>114</b>
<b>Chapter 19 - ZIM ZAM ZOOM! a girl falls from the sky</b>	<b>124</b>
<b>Chapter 21 - The Best Day Ever~~Su!</b>	<b>130</b>

<b>Chapter 22 - Square One</b>	<b>137</b>
<b>Chapter 23 - Paper Dolls</b>	<b>141</b>
<b>Chapter 24 - TigerLily Kiss</b>	<b>148</b>
<b>Chapter 25 - Colours of the Heart</b>	<b>154</b>
<b>Chapter 26 - Baby Tears</b>	<b>160</b>
<b>Chapter 27 - Moon Light Shadow</b>	<b>169</b>
<b>Chapter 28 - Grinnin' like a Manic!</b>	<b>174</b>
<b>Chapter 29 - So... This is GoodBye?</b>	<b>182</b>

# 1 - Welcome to The School of Your Dreams

characters:

Jazmyn Lun (Jazz)

age:15

race:human/vampire

special ability: Spell Caster/Tarot Spells

colors: black and white

description: Abandoned at a young age, Jazz was always in trouble the day she arrived at Orphanage. She bounced from school to school, until one day she was sent an invitation from the Dean of Mercedes. She's part emo, and part party girl. Every chance she gets, Jazz is off dancing or practicing her swords. She holds all smiles, but she holds a deep dark secret inside... Jazz is also half vampire.

Christal Hyuuga-Uchiha (Chii)

age: 15

race: human/wolf demon

special ability: Byakugan

colors: black, light blue and silver

description: a ninja girl from the village hidden in the leaf, Christal, better known as Chii-chan, is of the line Hyuuga-Uchiha. Her powers over the sheringan and byakugan make her one of the most powerful ninja around. Like Jazz, she loves to party. Her favorite spot at school is the lake coast, because across the lake is the boy's school... where her betrothed husband goes to school.

Delia Sarah Kajinya (Kaj)

age: 15

race: human/fire wolf demon

special ability: Pyrokinetic

colors: Black, red, and burnt orange

description: Kaj is a half demon bent on cleaning the sins of her father. She's looked down upon because of this, like Chii and Jazz, isn't a mage or wizard like Mercedes' other students. But Kaj still smiles. She has a boyfriend who goes to the school across the lake.

Invidia Rodunn (Envi)

age: 15

race: human/robot

special ability:

colors: black, silver, and green

description: a few years ago Envi was in an accident and realized she wasn't human. a few months later, Mercedes' sent out a request for her attendance. She became best friends with Kaj, Chii and Jazz almost immediately.

Elicia Morgans (Els)

age: 15

race: human/mermaid

special ability: Hydrokinetic

colors: Light blue, pink and white

description: Els isn't much like Jazz, or any of the others, but she does have magic. She is the co-captain of the swim team, and present of the pokemon trainer's guild. Even though they aren't alike, she's still friend with them.

Teddie Dormarte (Dreamer)

age: looks 20-ish, but doesn't tell

race: human/??

special ability: Fantasy

colors: Black, white and green

description: It's said that Dreamer's great grandfather started the school, but little else is known about the woman who is Dean. She's mildly critical about the girls, and loves to push them to their limits. Dreamer has many secrets of her own, and knows many secrets of others.

the first few chara's in muh fiction! if you want to be in it, leave a comment, here or on my profile.

## 2 - pilot

hello to all. This is a pilot of what is to come. Nothing really actiony happens until chapter 2-3. But right now you're meeting the main characters, and get to their back round. If you don't like **sword fights, slight ecchi hints, profanity, fist fights, kick boxing, demons, hethenism, homosexuals, diet coke, ramen, Yaoi, Wiccanism, Filipinos, Japanese, Koreans, African Americana, Europens, Native Americans, or girl talk in general** stop reading and go to another story... but if you do, you'll miss all the action. critique, tell me if you liked it, or what was wrong with it. Or if you want to be added as a character. Plz comment. Thank-you and have a nice day.

### chapter one: Peter says: Hello

"Oh my god!" said one girl. "It really works!"

"This is freaking me out!!" exclaimed another.

"Eek!" Another squealed. Jazmyn looked up from her book in interest. She sighed at the girls frenzy over the answers they were receiving from Peter. None had really known peter, but that's not what really made them crazy. Peter was a psychic tarot reader... who answered questions through his website. She turned back to her book about astrology when a friend of hers came over.

Marilynn 'Mermaid' Mollane smiled grandly at Jazmyn. "Wanna ask Peter a question??"

"Not really." replied Jazmyn. "You know it's just some sort of trick right?" She looked at the blonde over the top of her book.

"Come on! It's just for fun Jazmyn!!" Before she could protest, Marilyn had already typed in a question. "What... Class... are .. we in?"

She hit enter. Half a minute later Peter replied, "Algebra-5th hour."

"Who am I standing next to?" Marilyn typed.

"Jazmyn." peter replied. This sparked her interest a little. "Lemme see your laptop, Mermaid." Marilyn repositioned her computer so Jazmyn could type. "What is my middle name?"

...loading... loading... loading... Peter: Are you mocking me?

Jazmyn looked at the computer narrow eyed. "What color is my shirt?"

...loading... loading... loading... Peter: Keep making fun of me and I'm going to ignore you.

She turned to her friend. "Wow. That was really magical." Marilyn was called up to the teacher's desk to

get her grade on a test. Jazmyn turned away from Marilynn then back to the computer.

Peter: Why do you want to know trivial things like your name and the color of your shirt? We'd like to get to know you. Little Jazmyn Lun.

Jazmyn withdrew from the keyboard. Her eyes watched as the entire screen filled up with the phrase, "Little Jazmyn Lun," over and over again. Then the letters fell from their lines onto the bottom of the screen, and reformed into a symbol. The capital letter V with 3 lines going horizontally through it. Then as Marilynn approached, the screen went off then turned back on, and went back to the internet browser. As if nothing had happened.

The Bell rang and everyone made it to their next class. Jazmyn walked down the crowded hallway, a little shaken up, but not too seriously. 'What was all that about??' She took a deep breath then walked into class. Her last hour class was an off cycle, so she sat quietly in the basement locker room. Something rattled in a locker. Jazmyn looked up from her tarot cards at the noise. She sat with her back against the wall, the cards laid out in front of her. Jazmyn pulled all the cards back into the deck, then shuffled them quickly.

The lockers rattled louder, then from the farthest end of the basement, a door flew open. It crashed against another door that was already open. Jazmyn shuffled her deck quicker, watching as the poltergeist tear the locker doors open. When it was only two lockers away, Jazmyn fanned out nine pentacle cards, face up, around her. "Dream Technique 41: Shield!"

Jazmyn turned the fifth card sideways, trapping the ghost. 'Show me your form, on which you have! Strip the veil of Illusion you have taken, and make my eyes able to see!' It became visible to her, and standing before her was a large fiery wolf. It was black and had chains around its neck and wrists. Bright scarlet and burnt orange flames licked at the animal's tail and around the chains.

A bright green mark was on its forehead. "Hmm...?" The power in the shield rippled as the Giant beast tried to bite through it. Then it smiled at her. Jazmyn yelped as the flaming-wolf began to devour her power. "Damn it!"

"Shield! Redirect-entrapment!" The shield's power turned inward, surrounding the wolf in a globe. Jazmyn blindly pulled a card from the deck and held it out in front of her. The Midnight Sky card. "Purification spirit... Starlet." The power poured out in a short burst, the tore through the wolf-spirit's body, ripping out the negative energy. When all the negative energy was gone, a small puppy-spirit lay on the ground. It had a chain color and small embers around its paws. She lowered the globe and put out her hand for it. The fire wasn't hot, in fact it was like fur itself.

\* \* \*

"I'm expelled?!!!" she exploded, looking over the note. "But...! On what grounds!"

"These." The Principal held up a deck of cards. Jazmyn's tarot cards. "You've been warned Jazmyn Lun, first it was the palm reading, then the 'Dream Stones', then the books on Witchcraft--"

"Wiccan." Jazmyn corrected under her breath.

“And now these Satanic symbols! How dare you bring these- these—things into St. Katerina’s!” The principal rubbed her temples. Her secretary walked in and dropped a thick envelope in her basket. “Hmm? Seems there’s something here for you.” She opened it. “Because of your perfect grades, Mercedes’ Academy for Girls has asked for you to enroll.” The principal smiled up at her. “Perfect timing don’t you think?”

\* \* \*

“bar!” he yapped. Jazmyn gripped her back pack and suitcase nervously. “be quiet. This is all your fault. If I hadn’t run out of energy and fallen asleep on the floor... errr!”

“barr!” The puppy moved around in her shoulder bag and stuck his head out of the pocket. “Barrrrrr!”

“Well, looks like I’m stuck with ya.” Jazmyn got up as the bus stopped, like many of the other girls and unloaded. She looked out at the school. It was huge. At least five stories tall, with a beautiful view of a lush forest and sparkling lake. She took out a camera and took a few snap shots of school and the forest, then the lake with the trees in the background. “Who knows? Maybe I’ll like it here.”

\* \* \*

Jazmyn was met by a Senior who lead her to her dorm. She looked at the almost barren room. There were two dressers, a bathroom (mainly a toilet and a sink), a closet with four shelves and multiple hooks on back of the door, and two twin sized beds. One bed was pushed against the wall, and the other was next to the window.

A suit case and a army green bag were on the bed against the wall. Key chains with a ninja star and white eagle feathers hung from the zippers of both. And hand made name tags read off a girl’s name. “Christal ‘Chii’ Hyuuga.”

Jazmyn walked to the bed near the window and put her bags down. The puppy jumped out of the bag and shook. A flame jumped off its body and onto the mattress.

“Nraugh!!!” she used her sweater to beat the fire out. “How did this all come to it?!!”

“KONICHIWAAAAA!” shouted a voice. Jazmyn jumped and the puppy nearly fell off the bed. “Hiyas Roomie.”

Jazmyn turned to face the girl. She had brown skin, and black hair. Her eyes were a bluish silver, and she dyed two sections on her hair white to look like tentacles.

“My name’s Christal Hyuuga. You can call me Chii.” The girl extended her hand. Chii spotted the puppy. “So Kawaii! I don’t think you can keep him here though... You’re Jazmyn right?”

“Yeah, Jazmyn Lun.” She thumbed towards the puppy. “He’s not mine... I just found him.”

“Here! Let me give you a tour!” Chii grabbed her hand and they walked down the hall quickly.

Cafeteria, Gym, Pool, English Halls, Science Halls, Math Halls, Art Room A and B, the lake and....

“See that building waaaay waaaaay waaaaaaaaaaaaay over there??” asked Chii pointing to a dot across the giant lake.

“Yeah, I think so.” Said Jazmyn, squinting.

Chii blushed wildly and giggled. “That’s Alejandro’s Academy for Boys.”

“Why are you laughing?” asked Jazmyn.

“Because her Hubby goes there.” Said a voice.

They turned to see another girl. She had straight brown hair and fair skin. Her eyes were weird. One eye was dark brown and the other was Mahogany-red.

“So does your Kaj!” Chii turned back to the lake and put her hands together. “Byakugan!” She smiled for a few minutes then her hands separated, and Chii ended her jutsu.

“Oh, not that again.” Sighed the girl named ‘Kaj’. You and that red headed sand boy. Kaj blushed. “He’s got nothing on my Knuckles.”

“Blah blah blah. You and that red headed fighter!” Chii blew a raspberry at her. “Oh, this is one of the new-new students, Jazzie.”

“Oh, hey.” Kaj shook her hand. “I’m Delia Sarah Kajinyo.” She ran her fingers through her shoulder length auburn hair. Sparks of crimson and amber flew into the wind. Later the sparks turned into small fireworks. “Everyone calls Kaj.”

“I’m Jazmyn Lun. You can call me Jazz, or Jazzie.” She smiled. “Nice meeting you Kaj—“

“Barr!” The puppy popped out of Jazmyn’s bag. He jumped up and climbed into Kaj’s arms. “Barr!”

“Wes?!” She shouted. “Where the hell were you Wes?!”

“Barr!” he yapped.

“Umm... I found him in my school... of course he was bigger and trying to kill me.” Jazmyn spoke up. “Is this a magic school or something? Because Chii just used jutsu, and you have a fire-pup.”

“Well, yeah.” Said Chii. “So why did they send for you?”

“...I can use tarot cards.” Jazmyn said.

They both looked at her. “Is that all?” they said in unison.



"I can cast spells with them. Mainly defensive, or trap spells." Jazmyn pulled out her deck. The backs of the card were black with silver and red celtic symbols. "Are there others like you?"

"Every girl in this school has some sort of skill." Replied Chii. "You see, no one is sent to this school. They send a request for transfer because of your grades, art, physical ability, the usual thing for transfer. Then they give you a room and a uniform and they teach you how to control your gifts."

"eck! Uniforms!" asked Kaj. "The man's way of keeping us down!"

"After the first three months of school, when everyone get settled, they give you three school uniforms, a swimsuit, a sweat suit and a school bag."

"You get a choice in the color of your uniform." Said Kaj. "That's about the only good thing about them."

A bell rang off in the distance. "Well, I guess it's lunch time." Chii smiled. "Hey, there's a festival this Friday, you want to come?"

"Okay. What's happening at this festival?" asked Jazmyn.

Kaj and Chii grinned the largest smiles Jazmyn had ever seen. "We're going to meet the boys."

\* \* \*

A woman stepped out onto the stage and looked out at all the girls. "My, my my. It's nice to see so many new faces today." The dean pushed her glass from the bridge of her nose back a bit. "And do you all know why you're here ladies?"

"To Protect, to serve, and to guard the belief that no life is worthless!" shouted all the girls. "And to use our skills to their full extent of providing a shield for those who cannot fight."

"I'm glad you all studied your rule books." Smiled the Dean. "Now. This academy will serve as your home, and school. You will make friends, that will be like sisters. That is what we urge you to do. You may even make friends of the boys at Alejandro's."

At this most of the crowd went a buzz with talk of the festival coming up this Friday. The dean slammed her open hands on the podium, silencing them almost instantly.

"But be advised!" her voice boomed. "You will be faced to make choices, and some of these peoples you make friends into... things may not be as they seem."

\* \* \*

"What was all that about?" asked Mr. Naight. "Wasn't that a little much?"

"These girls aren't normal. And when people aren't normal, things aren't normal." The dean took off her glasses and cleaned them with a tissue. "With the festival coming up, let's hope we see our first

'Nymphes'."

Mr. Naight stood there as he watched the dean walk away. "I hope you know what you're doing Dreamer."

\* \* \*

"Woooo! This is gonna be fun!" screamed Jazmyn. She reached in her suit case and pulled out a dress. It was a dancing dress, that had spaghetti straps and a low back. The skirt was black, then an area around her breast was white. Christal gave her a weird look. "What?"

"Don't wear that. Kaj and Envi are coming over with our clothes." Chiil reached in her suitcase and pulled out a black head band with a metal plate. She tied it around her neck like a choker and began working on her hair. Combing back her black and white hair, she formed two pigtails, and tied them off with azul ribbons.

A knock at the door and Kaj and Envi entered. They were both wearing 'altered' Kimono's. Not kimono's that were changed for the gender usage, but seams were cut, measured, hemmed and sewn back to ridiculous lengths.

Kaj wore a black kimono with an obi of chains, and a scarlet and burnt orange flame pattern all over the dress. She wore knee high stockings that were red, and visible because the dress had been made into a mini. On Kaj's feet she wore black geisha sandals, that were at least 5 inches tall. The left sleeve was torn at the elbow (torn because of the fray), but the right was left in tact.

Invidia Rodunn (a.k.a. Envi) wore a black kimono that was torn at the knees, and both sleeves cut off. The pattern on her dress were light green and silver stars and clouds. She had maryjane shoes with navy-green striped stockings. Her hair was just as long as Kaj's, and tied into a ponytail with a ribbon made of kimono silk.

"Here." Envi threw Jazmyn then Chii each a box. "You have two hours to fix them up."

\* \* \*

"Ta~Da~~!" said Chii, turned around for them to see. She had a black kimono with silver and light blue cranes and dragons. She took some silvery blue ribbon and sewn it on the sleeves. She had done the same thing to the obi. Her skirt was shortened and pulled semi-taught like a dark tutu. On her feet, Chii had white tabi socks and she had more ribbons wrapping around her legs, and tied at the straps of her black wooden sandals. "Come on Jazzi-chan! I bet it looks wonderful!"

"Wait! I gotta add more starch!" She shouted through the bathroom door.

"We gotta go! The ferry leaves in five minutes!" said Kaj.

"Okay!" The door opened. "Wa~La~~!" She leaned against the door frame, and pouted like a supermodel. "I'm beautiful damnit!" She laughed. The sleeves were cut off then re sewn into arm warmers. Jazmyn used the excess cloth to add layers under her skirt that was about her knees. She went

through her box of sewing material, and instead of a fold, the girl attached a zipper. And at the neck a buckle up collar, and a metal studded belt.

"Now we all match." said Envi. "To the ferry!"

\* \* \*

"Oh wow." said Jazmyn. Everyone was dressed in semi-formal clothes, normal skirts, jeans and blouses, but when those four strutted in, everyone looked at them like they were crazy.

Kaj and Chii slung their arms around Jazmyn's shoulder's. "What? Too much?" asked Kaj. "Are you embarrassed with all the normal-magical kids looking at us like we're little hethens??"

"No... I like it." Jazmyn saw a pair walking towards them. A red head girl with lime-green eyes and a boy with dark purple hair and azul eyes.

"Kaj, Envi, Chii." The girl smiled. "This one of the new arrivals?"

"Hello, I'm Jazmyn." she smiled, shaking her hand. The girl must have gotten the memo about the redesigned kimono because she wore one. Possibly a child's because it had short sleeves that hadn't been touched and it reached just below her knees. It was black with purple and lime green flowers, and underneath she wore boots that reached the center of her calves. Her long hair was tied into pig tails tied off with one green string and one purple ribbon. But her partner wore normal clothes, jeans and a mauve button down shirt with the sleeves folded up to the elbow.

"Hi, I'm Elen. And this is my friend Vee." Elen pushed Vee up to her. "Say hi."

"Hey." he replied. At first he didn't seem interested in them, but a flash in his eyes and he extended his hand to Jazmyn. "Where ya from?"

"St. Katerine's." Jazmyn said. Envi grabbed her other arm, and began tugging her away. "Well! It was nice meeting you guys! Bye Elen! Bye Veeee~!"

When the four girls left, Elen turned to Vee. "What was all that about?"

"Hm?" He shrugged. "Thought I saw something ." Vee turned back to him and gave her sleeve a tug. "Are all the Dark Ones wearing these?"

Elen smiled and toothy grin, showing off her sharp canines. "Why do you say that like it's a back thing? Come on my little vampire. Let's go get some fried eel."

\* \* \*

"What do you guys want to do first?" asked Kaj. "There's the ferris wheel, gold fish, snacks, and--"

"Kaj." said a voice. "That you?"

They all turned to a boy black in red, white and black, with long red hair that was spiked into what looked like dreadlocks. He had mauve eyes and the same colored skin as Kaj.

"Knuckles!" she smiled and ran to him. Arms outstretched, the Kaj looked like she was going to hug the life out of him. But, just as they were about to make contact, she made a fist and punched Knuckles in the face. With such super human strength he was sent back at least ten feet. "I love you!"

He stood up dusting off the dirt from his jeans. He winked at her with a smile. "Love you too."

"How was that love?!" asked Envi and Jazmyn. They watched Kaj and Knuckles fight until they disappeared in a group of people then were gone.

"He's a fighter. And Knuckles loves a girl who can fight back." smiled Chii. She looked around anxiously, then her smile soon faded. "oh...he's not here yet."

A few boys came up and asked if they could accompany Chii-chan for the evening. She declined nicely, but they were very persistent. Then, as Envi was pulling Chii-chan out of the crowd of boys, the ground exploded. When the dust cleared a boy stood before them. He had short spikey red hair and aqua eyes. Around his eyes were dark rings, Jazmyn thought he might be wearing makeup. But she rethought the idea. Her eyes were almost just as dark as his, because of her lack of sleep. He wore a black man's kimono that had tan and auburn colored tigers on it.

"Konbanwa, Ai-chan." he said, with a small smile. Chii blushed. "Sorry I'm late."

Her arm hooked onto his and she laughed. "Better late than never, Kazekage-sama. Bye guys, we're going on the ferris wheel."

Soon, Envi and Jazmyn were all alone. They walked around, looking at all the fun activities. As they were walking, Jazmyn spotted a knife throwing booth. She stopped and watched as three boys tried to hit the bull's eye. "Envi! I wanna play this game!"

Envi looked at it. "Wouldn't you want to play the one with darts and balloons?" Envi followed Jazmyn to the booth. When Jazmyn looked at her, expecting her to participate. "I'm not playing. I could gouge out someone's eye."

"Five knives, two dollars." said the man. Jazmyn slammed down four dollars, excited to play. The three boys snickered at her. He handed her the small daggers and pointed to a line on the ground. "Stand there."

"What'll I get if I win?" she asked.

The man gave her a look then laughed. "One in the bull's eye, a toy made of wood. Two knives, three gold fish. Three a free ticket to the ferris wheel for two rides. Four your choice from the prize box. And Five, a choice from the large prize box."

"Okay." Jazmyn picked up the knife by the handle. Envi heard a few boys laugh. She was going to ask Jazmyn did she really want to do it, then the girl tossed up the knife, caught it at by the tip of the blade.

She brought her arm back and then threw it. 'Toink!' It hit the center. "One. Two. Three. Four. Five. Six. Seven. Eight. Nine." The last blade slipped from her hand then landed on the ring just outside the center. "Damn..." She smiled at the three other boys. "Where's my prize?"

\* \* \*

Envi went to get some cotton candy. When she was in line she saw a weird boy bothering the vendor. "This candy of cotton... it does not taste the same as cotton... nor candy."

The woman looked like she was at the end of her rope when Envi walked up. "One plea--"

"Don't buy it! The sign lies! This is neither cotton nor candy!" shouted the boy. She couldn't help but laugh. He looked sickly, for the boy had green skin, but black hair and blue eyes.

"Buzz off kid!" snapped the woman. "You're frickin' annoying!!"

"Yes, and I shall do this 'buzzing off' in which you speak. For your lies of candy cotton... such deception!" The boy's eyes went wide and he began thrashing out his arms. "YOU LIE!! LIESSSSS!!"

Envi laughed harder. She grabbed the boy's arm and pulled him away from the vendor before she killed him. "You're funny. Let's walk."

\* \* \*

Kaj and Chii saw Jazmyn standing on the lake shore. Looking blankly at the lake.

"Hey, what's up?" asked Kaj. She spotted a katana strapped to her back. "Cool. Where'd you get that?"

She was still looking out at the lake. Chii nudged her arm. "Hhmm?" She blinked. "Oh, I didn't notice you." Chii pointed to the sword. "I won a game."

"Why do you look so 'off in the Twilight Zone', Jazzi-chan?" asked Chii.

Kaj inspected the girl. Her starched skirt was ruffled and her belt was lopsided. Her bangs looked a little frazzled. "You got into a fight? What's her name?! We'll jump her later."

"I'll kill the bastard myself." she snarled.

"OMG JAZMYN!!!" screamed a voice. Envi ran over to them, nearly falling over Jazmyn and Chii. She gasped and panted and looked like she was going to die. "You...? Chase...?! Kiss..?!!!"

"STFU ENVI!!!" she shook the other girl. Kaj and Chii looked at Jazmyn. She let go of Envi and let the girl go. Her face flushed red. "Fine... tell 'em."

"Our little Jazz, just got kissed by Chase Young." said Envi.

"Way to go newbie!" cheered Chii.

"I didn't want to kiss him! The damn perv stole it from me!" she said.

"How can he steal a kiss from you? That's impossible unless--" Kaj looked at the flushed red girl. "It was your first kiss."

"And next time I'm gonna kill the bastard." The three other girls slung their arms around her.

"Shhh! Fireworks!" Envi said.

Explosions of red, purple, white and green filled the sky. Everyone on the coast oohed and ahed at the sight. Everything felt great. Great food. Great rides. Great fun. And great friends to share it with. The only thing that spoiled her night was that damn Chase Young. But tomorrow was another day, maybe it would be better.

## 3 - Water, Fire, Metal, Blood and Masks

### chapter two: Water, Fire, Metal, Blood and Masks

Beep! Beep! Beep! Jazmyn lifted up her head to look at Chii's alarm clock. It read 7:55. "Aww damn!" She jumped up and went to her closet. "Chii-chan! wake up! We're gonna be late."

"Hm! Hm!" Laughed the girl in her sleep. "Yes I would love some fried tofu... You love my yukata, too Gaara-sama...?"

"CHII-CHAN!!" Jazmyn snapped. The girl jolted up and looked groggily at the girl. "Get up! Now!"

\* \* \*

Their classes were together and most of the first year students were late. So Jazmyn was relieved that she wasn't in trouble. They stood in their gym uniforms as the coach began to speak. "This is intro to swim. Here you will learn how to kick, stroke, break correctly and other things. If anyone has a problem, please speak now." Jazmyn, like a few other girls, raised her hand. "What is it Miss Lun?"

"I can't swim." she replied. Everyone in class looked at her funny, or snickered. "I sink immediately to the bottom."

The coach turned back to the class. He spoke clearly to them. "Is there anyone else who can't swim?" Two other girls raised their hands. One of them was Envi.

"Miss Lun, please step forward and stand here." he pointed to a spot next to the pool. She walked out of line and did as she was told. "In this class. You will learn all the basics. Including..." He grabbed the collar of Jazmyn's gym shirt. "How to float." He tossed her in the deep end.

The girl screamed and in a large splash went in. After a few seconds, everyone noticed she hadn't surfaced. The bubbles stopped coming to the top of the water.

\* \* \*

Jazmyn's head felt like it was going to explode. She felt her eyes burn when the chlorinated water pushed on her. Her arms flapped wildly but she didn't move from the bottom of the pool. There was no more air in her lungs, and her body was pulling itself apart, trying to find more oxygen.

Her eyes closed slowly. And she was out of it. Darkness, cold and painful. Then this overwhelming loneliness writhed into her. "Mama?! Where are you mama?! MAMA--?!!"

Her eyes opened and she was on the tiles breathing. She coughed up all the water in her lungs, lying on her side for a few seconds. A blonde girl was in the pool. She looked at Jazmyn with relief, her blue eyes showing sincerity.

Envi knelt beside her, after making sure the girl was alright, She glared at the teacher. "She told you she'd sink!" she shouted. "What part of 'I can't swim, I sink immediately' don't you understand?!"

"To the principals office! Both of you!" he snapped back.

"Fine. I hate this damn class anyways." said Envi, without a second thought. She turned to the blonde girl. "Thanks Els. I would've dived in myself, but you know."

"No prob." Els replied. She pushed off the wall and dove under the water. As she did, Jazmyn saw the girl's azul and pink mermaid tail. Envi pulled Jazmyn up.

"Come on." Envi glared at the teacher, mumbling vulgar words towards him.

\* \* \*

"You okay?" asked Envi.

"I'm alive." Jazmyn replied.

They looked at the door, then entered. A secretary sat at the desk typing away at a computer and looking over files. The woman looked up at them. "Ms. Dormotte will see you in a moment."

The small intercom on the secretary's desk turned on. "Who is it Fiona?"

"Rodunn and Lun, Ma'am." Fiona replied.

"Send them in." The Secretary waved them into the Dean's office. "So what did my little duckies do so early into the year?"

"The coach pushed Jazmyn into the pool, after she told him she couldn't swim." said Envi.

The Dean looked at Jazmyn. She was soaking wet in her gym uniform, her hair clinging to her body. She pressed the intercom button. "Fiona bring me a dry towel for Miss Lun please."

"Right away ma'am." A few minutes later the woman came in and handed the girl a school towel.

"And he laughed when she didn't surface." said Envi. "Was there any reason he'd resent her so much, that Coach Witeger would try and kill her?"

"Huh!" The Dean chewed on the end of her pencil. "Yeah, he hates your kind..." She looked at their quizzical looks. "Did you two not read the welcoming letter?" They shook their heads. "Ugh!" She reached in a folder and rummaged through the papers. She found Jazmyn Lun's welcoming letter. "Hello students. We are here by recognizing you as a student at Mercedes' Academy. We also see that your special gift and blood line lead you into a special class. This class is called the Shadow Division, and you have the choice of becoming a full fledged member of it. Look at the following attachment to look at your information." The Dean handed Envi then Jazmyn their letters. They flipped to the second pages



and read on.

"Lun, Jazmyn. Age 15. Class: Nosfuratu." she read out loud. "I'm... a vampire?"

"I already know what I am." said Envi, crumpling up the letter and shoving it in her pocket. "That doesn't tell us why the coach hates us."

"He despises the Shadow Division. And thinks they shouldn't be here, and disband the students in the group." But the Dean smiled. "We shouldn't judge those we want to know more about. Right?" She went through her drawers and took out a dollar. "While you're up, Miss Lun, could you get me a Diet Coke?"

\* \* \*

"You did what?!" asked the Coach.

"When one of my students says she can't swim, you don't drop her in wholeheartly." The Dean sipped her Diet coke through her bendy straw. "You know better then that Devon." She spun around the chair once, then looked back at the coach. "I'm done. You can go now." She waved her hand for him to leave. Coach Witerger gave her an angry look, but left her to her work. She was happily drinking her beverage.

"That was odd." said Mr. Naight. [inezmusic.com](http://inezmusic.com)

"Raugh!" she cried out suprised. She whiped her nose with a tissue and looked at him. "That burned you know. And were you spying on us the entire time?"

"He wants to disband the Shadow Division." Naight said, sitting down. He stood up abruptly, and looked at the chair. There was a dark spot on it. Water. "Oh, that's nice Dreamer."

"Yeah. The Lun girl was here today. Seems Witerger threw her in the pool." Dreamer sipped her drink and looked over at Naight. "She sat there."

"So what are you going to do?" he asked, moving to the other chair. "We've been having trouble with a few of the students within the SD."

Dreamer finished the coke, and tossed the can in a recycling bin. "These girls have nowhere else to go, so what the hell do we do?" She brushed her hair away from her eyes a moment but her bangs just fell back into the way they were. "It's not their fault at what they are. You can't choose your parents." She looked at the clock. "Aren't you going to be late for you class, Seigi-kun?"

\* \* \*

Elen, Kaj, Envi, Chii and Jazmyn were in the same class (finally!) and were all excited for it. "Dark Defense and Combat Training 101." The class was taught by a Mr. Ian Naight, Who, as far as any of the girls had known, was new to the school entirely. A knock at the door, and it opened to a someone whose arms were full of papers and folders. A paper fell, he stepped on it and he was on the ground. Papers flew everywhere, and some of the students laughed.

Others got out of the seats and helped the man himself up. "Good Morning ladies."

Everyone stood on end when he said this. For the teacher, whom they had never met, was absolutely drop dead gorgeous. "Goodmorning Sir."

"Welcome to Dark Defense and Combat Training 101." he smiled. He took up a piece of chalk and wrote on the board. "My name is Ian Naight." He look at all the students. "There's 27 of you?"

"Yes." the responded in unison.

"Hm..." Mr. Naight looked around the room again, then at the room itself". "There isn't enough room. We're going outside."

\* \* \*

"Okay." He exclaimed, stretching out his arms to the sky. "You're first assignment... Is eachother."

The girls looked around at one another. A brunette with silver eyes raised her hand. "I don't understand."

"Combat Training." He smiled, his amber eyes a glow. "I've already paired you up with your polar opposites. It's like a pre-test. You and your partner are given 5 minutes, and whoever runs out of energy first gets the lower grade." Mr. Naight began reading off the list. "Ah-Fong vs. Kajinyo." Kaj stepped forward out of the line. Her opponent was Miran Ah-fong. The girls stood next to the lake, Miran with her back to it, and Kaj across from her. "Here are the rules: No aiming at the eyes, or face. No biting. No knee kicking, or kicking in elbows. You may use as much Chi, Chakra or energy as needed." He put a whistle to his lips, and blew.

All the girls sat at least twenty feet from them, Mr. Naight standing in front. His arms crossed over his chest he watched the two girls. Jazmyn looked up at him for a moment, then turned back to Kaj and Miran. The first one to move was Miran...

\* \* \*

Her hands outstretched, Miran caused a huge wave of water splash of Kaj. "Come on little Kaji! Show us what the Shadow Students are made of!!" she laughed.

"Shut up!" A burst of fire came from her finger tips, turning the water to steam. A long stream of fire form into a whip, and Kaj ran for her. Miran dodged her move, spinning aside from the strike. Miran's open hands pulled the water, causing it to freeze. Spears of ice rained down on Kaj. The hydrokinetic smiled and began walking towards her class. "Where are you going, Miran-baka?!" Kaj pushed a path in the ice, and stepped out in a cloud of steam. "You Halfnorms are so stupid."

Kaj stepped up into the clearing and the steam blew away from her. Her uniform was torn and she was bleeding. She looked at her open arm, sparks jutted from the blood and healed seconds later. A gust of wind blew around them, flapping Kaj's brown-red hair around her face. She flipped her head back, and in a flare of fire and sparks, her looks changed.

Her long hair was now short, colored scarlet red and orange. Her left eye was blue and her right eye was red. Kaj's skin had gone lighter, not lighter as in paller. Her skin was a pigment of grey, almost white. And tatoos decorated her all over... No, stitches all over her skin. Going horizontally around her arms, legs, neck. Her nails were black and sharp. Her eyes blinked, clearing out the fog. Then in a flash, she came at Miran. In another cloud of steam and fire, Miran was thrown into the lake.

Kaj walked to her spot next to Envi and Chii. With a flip of her hair, she looked normal again. Her odd brown eyes and her deep red hair. She saw Jazmyn's confused look and shot her a charming smile. Jazmyn looked as the next girls go up and wondered to herself, when it came for her turn... what would she do?

\* \* \*

"Um... Sir?" asked Jazmyn, looking around. Most of the girls had already done their turn. Except her. "If there are 27 of us... and I'm the 27th... who do I fight?"

Mr. Naight looked at her sitting on the grass. Then up behind the class. "Your partner will be here." He said calmly. "Ah, here he is now."

"HE?!!" everyone uproared.

There ws a tug on her ponytail. Jazmyn looked behind her. "WTF?!!! YOU?!!!"

With a sneer Chase let go of her ponytail. "Get up." was all he said. With her mouth open, and her eyes almost as big as her mouth, Jazmyn looked at mr Naight.

"Please tell me you're lying!" she exclaimed. She stood up and walked over to Mr. Naight. "He's a boy! And-- And--" Jazmyn stumbled as she tried to find another reason.

Mr. Naight gentle tapped his clipboard on the top of her head. "Chase here is working off a detention, and your class is uneven." He tapped her two more times, then leaned over and spoke to her in her ear. "Besides, this'll be a piece of cake. Nothing but a lover's spat."

"EWAH?!!" she shouted. 'He freaking knows about the festival?!' Mr. Naight pushed her forward. Jazmyn rolled her eyes, and dusting of the grass from her skirt she moved to the spot near the lake. She got into a fighting stance. Jazmyn saw Chase didn't bother to, he just stood up straight with his arms across his chest. Before she could say anything to him, he made a kissy face at her.

Mr. Naight blew the whistle. Chase disappeared. Jazmyn stood her ground. Some of the girls asked where he went, others tried to follow him with their eagle like eyes. Chii and Kaj looked at her, standing almost perfectly still. Possibly looking like a fool.

"What is she doing?!" whispered Els. "She'll get slaughtered if she just stands there!"

"Maybe she's a terrakinetic and she needs to concentrate?" asked Chii.

"Vampire." said Kaj and Envi.

Envi spoke up first. "The Dean told her this morning."

"Well she hasn't even honed her senses." said Kaj.

"Hyaah!" Chase punched her and she flew into the clearing. Jazmyn quickly stood up and readied herself for his second attack. It didn't seem he was holding back, and it didn't seem she was trying to block either. Finally, after the forth shot, the girl tried. But failed, and was hit in the side. There was a loud crack from her ribs. "Come on little girl! I didn't request you especially just to have you fail because you won't try!"

Jazmyn stood up. She rubbed her head and looked over at him. Jazmyn reached for her hair band and pulled it off. Her midnight hair flowin around her head. "Fine. I'll try not to kill you." she smiled. In a blur, Jazmyn was in front of him. Her body turned, and she tried to kick him. Chase flipped backwards, dodging her. Now, something had clicked, and both of them were moving in blurs. There were claps, and crashed as they made contact. The girls had trouble keeping up.

"Byakugan!" Chii used her eyes to search the open field. She spotted them. "They're up there!" She pointed to the top of some pine trees.

In a barrage of punches and kicks they exchanged blows.

Chase came at her. "MONKEY STRIKE!"

"REPEL THE MONKEY!!" She evaded his attack, but fell out the tree. She landed on her feet. Just as they were about to go at again, Mr. Naight blew the whistle.

"Time's up!" he shouted. Naight scribbled something down on the clip board. "Come on back you two."

Chase stood next to her, then held out his hand. "You did well." he said. Jazmyn didn't move to shake his hand. "Oh, one more thing." Chase's hand went down and then quickly, flipping up her skirt. She screamed and he laughed. "Pink! Ha!" Jazmyn tried to punch him, but he caught her fist. "Can I go now?"

"Yeah. We're done here." said Naight still writing on the clipboard. "I'll tell Maniac you served your detention already."

\* \* \*

"Where did you learn that?" asked Chase.

"Learn what?" Jazmyn snapped back. "I got a goddamn C because you went all out!"

"Repel the monkey?" he asked again, more annoyed. "Where did you learn it?"

"I don't know. You were going to hit me in the face. So I just did what I thought was right--" His hand

grabbed her arm. "OW! Let go!"

"I'll ask you again, Lun. Where. Did. You. Learn. Repel. The. Monkey?!" Chase's orange eyes looked at her, something deep inside him made her shiver.

SLAP! That girl had just slapped him.

He let go of her arm. She turned and ran from him, away from the darkness she saw in his eyes alone. Jazmyn shivered. As he watched her go, Chase felt his cheek. Her nail had cut him and she had drawn blood. Chase smiled. He had made a very good choice. A very good choice indeed.

## 4 - More charas

The characters box is **closed!** I'm sorry if you wanted to join, but I already have enough. Maybe on my next story you'll apply in time, but for now, enjoy the others, and their adventures.

Eliana Howards (Elen)

age: 15

race: human/demon (isn't clear what type)

special ability: pyrokinetic

colors: Black, mauve, and lime

descriptions: Loud and energetic, Elen is part of the Shadow Division. She's a similar genis of fire demon like Kaj, but is another kind.

Justice Naight (Mr. Naight or Seigi-kun)

age: looks 20-ish, but doesn't say

race: human/vampire

special ability: Illusion

colors: black and blue

description: is a teacher at the girls' school for combat training and dark defense. Don't know anything past that.

Miaruko Sol (MeMe or Sun-chan)

age: 10

race: human/Neko-witch

special ability: spell caster

colors: white, pink and gold

description: A young sorcess whose past is closely related to Jazmyn's. MeMe love Jazmyn to a point where it's annoying and they get into fights. She's a great DDR player.

Burnidette Lynn (Burn)

age: 15

fav 2 colors: Orange and Black

race: Gifted Human

special ability: Contact- She can "talk" to animals through telepathy, but can also "read" human thoughts, though this power is very mild and she can rarely even pick up a sentence.

description: Burn discovered she had her powers at the age of 9. Ever since then she's done her best to make them stronger. Along with Contact, Burn is very agile and fast, which comes in handy when fighting an enemy. She currently has no boyfriend, but adores Lao Jiang a little bit.

Daiserei Vinerele (Daisy)

age: 15

race: human/vampire

colors: dark purple and dark green

special ability:Puppet- can psychically control others if she looks into their eyes

description: Is hyper and fun loving, even though she part of the Shadow Division and looked down upon. Daisy is friends with the others, and has a boyfriend who isn't in the boys' Shadow Division... which she could get in alot of trouble for.

## 5 - More charas 3

### others (from other animes/cartoons that I've edited to fit in)

Chase Young

age: 17

race: human/demon dragon

special ability: super strength and speed, can use magic

colors: black, green, and gold

description: Jazmyn 'boyfriend', Chase makes her life a living hell. From the time they first met at the festival, to a fight that escalated to almost killing one another. He's a punk with nothing better to do but pester the girls. He

Gaara

age: 16

race: human/tanuki demon

special ability: Sand control

colors: black, grey and red

description: The silent type, except when thrown into a fury. He loves Chii, not only for her skills and beauty, but for her demon counter part.

Norbert (Knuckles)

age: 17

race: gifted human

special ability: super speed and strength, Chaos Control

colors: red, and black

description: Knuckles is on the school's judo team and captain of the school's boxing team. He loves Kaj not only for her looks, but for her ability to keep up with him when they fight.

Zim

age: 16 (??)

race: human...?

special ability: is smart

colors: purple, pink and black

description: He's wild, a bit annoying, but super smart when it comes to computers. He's a friend of Envis and helps her when viruses attack her system.

### Others whom I borrowed from artists:

Vincent Jerards (Vee)

age: 15

race: vampire/demon

special ability: Illusion, can mimic abilities of others if he has a small amount of their blood

colors: purple, and black



description: His cool level headed attitude contrasts Elen's flamboyantness. He's her best friend, and polar opposite.

Lao Jiang

age: 17

race: human (?)/demon bird

special ability:

colors: red, gold and black

description: He's two faced. One face he's a ruthless killer... other face a fatherly man caring towards girl under the age of 15.. o.o

Cynic (??where his last name?!)

age: 17

race:human (?)/demon hedgehog

special ability:

colors: purple, silver and black

description: Cynic is a Goofball at heart.. prankster at soul... and a kick @\$\$ break dancer.. :D

Ash Trent

colors: yellow and green

race: human/elf (like in the Lord of the Rings)

special ability: Super speed, and agility

description: Even though their relationship is frowned upon, Ash is Daisy's boyfriend. He's calm and collected, and member of the school archery team.

## 6 - Recollection of Ethics

### chapter three: Recollection of Ethics

Chii smelled the air, something was different. She didn't know what, but something big was going to happen. She looked down at Jazmyn who was standing at the base of the tree. Jazmyn looked up at Chii and waved.

"Hey! Come on!" Jazmyn waved. "Lunch?! Remember Chii?"

That was right, she had made plans to sit with everyone during lunch. She jumped from the tree and landed gracefully on the ground. "Okay. Let's go."

\* \* \*

"Can I ask you guys a question?" said Jazmyn. Envi, Kaj, and Chii nodded, acknowledging her. "How did you all become like this? I mean... We're not human, and it doesn't make sense to me."

"Jazzi-doll, nothing in this world makes sense." said Kaj. "Look at Chii. She's of the Hyuuga AND Uchiha clan. Do you think either family wants her? No. And you why? It isn't because the Uchihis and Hyuugas hate each other it's because of what her older sister did to her."

Jazmyn looked at Chii who was quietly munching a rice ball. "A wolf demon was terrorizing our village... so after I was born, my older sister sealed her inside me. It wasn't until two years ago that I found this out." Chii finished her first rice ball. "And I promised myself, that I'd become as powerful as the demon inside. And to prove that I am me, not Ookamiyasha."

"And our Envi here." Kaj thumbed towards the spanish girl. "Did you know she's part robot??"

"Yeah. A few months back, a car hit and ran over me. I didn't die, i just stood up and walked myself to the hospital." Envi played with her empty pop can. "Then, out of the blue, I was accepted to Mercedes and here I am. Right now, I just want to find who did this to me and why. "

"But you're still human. Why are you in te Shadow division?" asked Jazmyn.

"Because the school board doesn't see me as a real human. My heart doesn't move to the information my brain sends, but by a metal pump in my chest." Envi crushed the pop can. "I can feel pain, cry, laugh, get mad, and all those other things, but they say I'm not real."

Jazmyn turned to Kaj. "What about you, Kaj? Why are you here?"

She shrugged. "I'm not an elemental." Kaj yawned then propped her head on the table. She closed her eyes, but still spoke to Jazmyn. "I'm half fire demon, and anything with the words 'hakf' and 'demon' automatically go under the classification 'Shadow'." She opened one eye and looked at her. "What about

you? What's your story?"

"My story? I don't have one." she replied. "I was just found when I was five wondering the streets. I was sent to an orphanage, then home to home to home." Jazmyn stirred her applesauce. "Anything before the orphanage is a blur." She looked up at the lunch line. "I'm going to get a strawberry punch. Anybody want anything?" They all declined.

Jazmyn went up to the woman, purchased her juice then began to her table. There was a wet spot on the floor from when the custodian mopped. She skidded, then crashed into someone. "OMG!!" she exclaimed. "I'm so sorry! There was water on the floor! Here let me help." Jazmyn attempted to help the girl clean herself up, when the girl pushed her down.

"Look what you've done you damn clutz!" exclaimed the blonde. She wiped the grape soda off with a handful of napkins. "All over my uniform!"

"I said I was sorry!" she said, with true sincerity.

"Well, why don't you just watch where you're going you damn halfbreed whore?!!" The blonde picked up a styrofoam bowl of apple sauce and dumped it on her head.

'What? Half breed whore?' Jazmyn was lost for a moment. She looked around everyone was laughing. She looked around and lost sight of her table. Everyone was laughing. Then two people grabbed her arms and ran out of the lunchroom with her. They kept running until they were in the locker room. 'Half breed whore?'

"You okay?" asked Envi.

"Why did she say whore?" Jazmyn asked, finally finding her voice. "It was an accident! I slipped on some water!"

Envi turned on a faucet and wet a paper towel. She cleaned the food from Jazmyn's eyes. "We now, Jazzi." Envi forced a smile, but Jazmyn could tell she was in pain. "She called you a whore because..." Envi gave Jazmyn the paper towel. "For some damn reason, everyone thinks we're sluts and hoes, because of what we are. Because they assume we don't know what sin is."

As Envi and Chii tried to clean her up, Jazmyn turned the faucet to full and stuck her head under it. The water was freezing cold, but she didn't care. What was happening at this school... was no different than what happened at the others...

\* \* \*

'Can I play with you?' asked the little girl.

The group of kids looked at her, then turned away and kept playing kickball. She sat down in the dirt and began to watch the ants. A darkblue butterfly flew by and she followed it into the forest. Past trees and bushes, with her arms outstretched, she followed it. Hoping to touch the creature, and maybe catch its magic.

Scales from the wings fell off, creating tiny sparkles in the sun. Magic. That's what she wanted. She stopped where she was, and looked around. She was in the middle of the small forest, completely lost and alone. She outstretched her hands and reached to the sky. Things rustled in the bushes and trees. The figures moaned as the wind blew. Her eyes traveled everywhere, looking for a familiar sight. She broke down to tears, wailing loudly, hoping someone would find her.

\* \* \*

It was nightfall and one of the nuns had noticed they were a child short. Sister Ann Marie looked around the playground. She heard the cries for help around 9:32 p.m. Ann Marie went in the forest with two more nuns and flashlights. They found the source of the cries, in a tree. The little girl climbed down and was about to hug one of the nuns, when they began scolding her.

"Why are you so difficult Jazmyn?!" Sister Caroline asked. "Why couldn't you have stayed with the other children!"

"They don't like me..." Jazmyn shuffled her feet. "...Because I look different from them. My hair is straighter and my skin is lighter... Jason said I wasn't black... And Tera said I have white people hair."

Ann Marie took the little girl's hand and led her back to the orphanage. "Come along. Come along. It's late, and we don't need anymore crying."

\* \* \*

Kaj sat in a tree, eating pocky and playing with Wes. She put out her arm, and lowering her illusion shield and looked at her real self. The stitches and scars, she thought about what Jazmyn had asked. "What about you Kaj? Why are you here?"

She looked at herself, then thought about the shattered memories she had. The darkness, then the gut wrenching pain of having herself torn into multiple shards then reassembled so painstakingly slow. Kaj felt a jolt traveling down her spine. She looked out at the schoolyard. Something moved, and an ominous aura followed. "What?! Here?!"

And alarm went off somewhere in the school telling all the students to come inside. Kaj grabbed Wes and began back. Just as she was jumping along the trees, one of them came at her. She sensed it and dodged. "Hyaah!" She kicked it into a tree, causing the huge structure to break. As she did that a barrage of other came at her. She didn't stop, she just kept going towards the school. "Aww shoot. Why now?! And why are there so many?!"

\* \* \*

Envi struck the black figure, cracking the mask in half. Another came at her from behind and she dodged it, using her speed and strength the girl brought a kick down on the back of its head. "What the hell are these things?!" Another came at her, this one had the body of a bat and a mask decorated with blue and red stripes.

"Everyone get inside!" screamed a teacher. "Now! Don't let them touch you!!"

A student fell, then one with wings swooped down for her. Chii stood in front of the girl and deflected it. All playfulness gone from her, the young ninja jumped up into the air. She used a chakra burst to shoot herself through the air and landing on one of the flying ones. She pulled out two scrolls, one white one green. Chii cut her thumbs and wrote a line of blood on both scrolls. She jumped and in a whirlwind of energy, thousands of kunai and shuriken rained on them. Tied to each weapon was a paper charm. "Purifying~ jutsu! Dragon of the heavens strike!"

Most of the flying ones had been destroyed, purified and sent to the soul society. That's right. These creatures were--

"Hollows! Hundreds of them!" said Kaj, landing next to Envi.

"Where the hell did they come from?!!" she asked, striking another Hollow down.

"Aieeee!" someone screamed. They all looked up to see a giant batlike Hollow carrying someone away. "Let go!"

"What ever you say!" laughed the demon. Its claws let the girl go. She plummeted towards the ground.

"AHHHHH!!!" the girl screamed.

Jazmyn ran and held out her arms to Envi. "Envi, throw me!"

"You got it." Their hands gripped each other, then Envi launched her into the air. Jazmyn caught the girl, but couldn't adjust in midair. A hollow jumped up and crash them both to the ground. Its huge claw pinned them both on the ground.

"We need this one. Sorry for all your efforts." it said.

"The hell you are!" screamed Envi. Her arm transformed into a cannon, and she shot off energy blasts at it. The Hollow let go of them. It charged at Envi, "Bad move." She aimed the cannon at his face and fired. The hollow was destroyed. With that, what was left of the numbers retreated and disappeared into the shadows.

"We'll be back!" hissed another Hollow.

Jazmyn was on her hands and knees ontop of the Hollow's former hostage. "You?!" she asked.

"Zizi-neesama!" shouted the girl. She flung her arms around her neck and laughed. Jazmyn stood up, with the girl still around her neck. "I missed you Zizi-neesama!"

"MeMe! Let go!" she shouted. Jazmyn Pried the girl from around her neck. "Why the hell are you here?!"

MeMe looked up at her. "I got a letter saying I was accepted here... so I packed up and moved. I didn't know you'd be here!" She hugged her around the waste. "I missed you so much, Jazzi-neesama!"

"Everyone all right?" asked Envi.

"Yes." they all responded. MeMe ran to Envi. She took Envi's hand then pressed it against her forehead as she bowed.

"Thank-you for saving me and my sister." The girl lifted up her head. She shoulder length black hair bounced, and rose colored eyes danced. "My name is Miaruko Sol."

\* \* \*

"She needs to go back home!" Jazmyn said, as persistent as she could to the Dean. "She doesn't belong here!"

"You and I both know that isn't true. She has a magic potent of 93.12. That's a well trained apprentice, at least. And if she doesn't start her schooling soon..." Dreamer said.

"She doesn't belong here. She's human. Purer than human even!" Jazmyn was silenced when Dreamer slammed her hands on the desk.

Her stern look faded and she smiled at the vampire. "My decision is final." Jazmyn stood up and tried not to let her anger show. She politely left, and when the door closed, Dreamer relaxed. She raised up her hands and rubbed her palms. "Damn that hurt."

"How goes life sis?" asked voice.

"Damnit." She turned her chair to look at him. "Why do you men never knock? Or use the door for that matter?"

"Just want to tell you Chase already served his sentence." he said.

"That was quick Phillip." said Dreamer, stretching out his name to annoy him. "How?"

"He helped Mr. Naight with one of his classes." Dreamer gave him a confused look. "Yeah. I was just as surprised as you." He patted her on the back. "Have a nice day Sis." Phillip used the door this time to leave.

"God..." she breathed. "You really are a Maniac, aren't you?" With a wave of her hand, a pen floated across the desk and into her hand. She began filling out MeMe's schedule and others work for the new arrivals. Dreamer was swamped. Paper work was flooding from everywhere for new arrivals and transfers. She looked over the names of the new girls that arrived that day. "Burn Lynn, Miaruko Sol, Dominique Adams..." Her head slumped on the desk. "Damn it all."

\* \* \*

"Is this your dorm, Zizi-neesama?" asked MeMe, still following her around. "Where do I go?"

"Your dorm is on the other side of the school MeMe." Jazmyn said, almost dreading saying it. "You're too young, why did you agree to come here?!"

MeMe hugged Jazmyn around the waste. "Isn't missing you enough? That nice lady with the glasses said you go here. And she said I had potential to be as good as you one day!"

"MeMe! Let go of me damnit!" She shoved her back. "You always did this! You clung onto me when things got too hard, and hid behind me when you were scared! Why did those monsters want you?!!"

The ten year old's eyes welled up with tears. "You think you're so great with your cards! You do the same thing when things get too tough! YOU RUN AWAY!!" MeMe shouted. Jazmyn flung her arms around her, but this time MeMe fought back. "You left me alone...! Again...! Zizi...!"

Envi was around the corner, listening to them. She looked to see if everything was all right. Jazmyn looked up and spotted her. "MeMe, go to your room. Someone will be there to show you around." MeMe looked up at her. "You're in a different classification. You're a spell caster, I'm a vampire." A girl in a white uniform looked at them. She had pink eyes and purple hair, and fair skin. Neko ears on the top of her head and a tail. She motioned for MeMe, all the while glaring at Jazmyn. "We'll meet tomorrow for lunch. Kay?"

MeMe took the hand of the white uniformed girl and they walked to another part of the school. She looked over her shoulder at Jazmyn, her pink eyes glaring. Envi approached when the two were gone. "What was all that about?"

"She wanted to stay in my room." Jazmyn's went behind her head and she began walking away.

"...I never knew you had a sister?" said Envi.

Jazmyn yawned, then looked up at the ceiling. "We're not blood sisters. Just step sisters, or something... What do you want to do now?"

"Investigate why the damn hollows were after here." responded Envi.

\* \* \*

'What am I?' she asked.

'You're my daughter.' he replied.

'And you love me don't you?' she asked, lifting up her head. He nodded. "Then why did you do this to me? It hurts to be this way...! You should of left me dead!"

Kaj juttet up in bed, breathing heavily. She looked around the dimly lit room to realize Envi wasn't in bed. With her mind still spinning, she decided to take a walk. She stood in front of the door that led to the outside, but remembered it was locked exactly at seven o'clock. Three hours ago. She sighed and walked back to her room. She looked out the window, and saw two shadows move. Kaj didn't feel the demonic aura of the Hollows, so it wasn't them. She took a closer look and found that it was Envi and

Jazz. She climbed out the window on the third floor, landing just below it gracefully.

"What are you two doing?" Kaj asked.

"Trying to find the tear that the Hollows came through." said Envi. "We totally lost their trail. It's late, let's try again when there's some sunshine."

Kaj looked around in the darkness, her eyes well adjusted to the lack of light. Why did Envi want to go inside, her eyes had to have adjusted automatically from the time she stepped outside. No, it was something else. Then Kaj felt it. "GET DOWN!!"

Before any of them could react, black tentacles reached out of nowhere, and the sharp ends impaled them. "NNGRAUGH!!" screamed Kaj. "SWORD OF THE FALL!! TETSUNOSUKE!!" A large halibur sword formed in Kaj's hand. She struck the tentacles down, letting the other two go. "You okay?"

"In a Minute... You won't be." The hollow appeared. It had hundred of tentacles coming out of its black shadowy body. "Where is Taiyoko?!"

Taiyoko?' Kaj wondered. 'Daughter of the Sun?'

"We don't know what you're talking about!" said Jazmyn. "And even if we knew, what makes you think we'd tell?" Jazmyn's cracked her knuckles loudly.

"Prepare to die, bastard." Envi took on a battle stance, her body readying itself for a strike. "Prepare to die."



## 7 - Aishiteru Neesama/ Amo mi Ate/ I love you, Big Sis

### chapter four: Aishooteru Neesama/ Amo mi Ate/ I love you, Big Sis

An explosion roared from the lake side, it woke many of the girls. They looked out the windows, wondering what was going on. Over the p.a. Dean Dreamer announced everyone should stay in there rooms. MeMe looked out her window at the lake side. 'Please... let her be okay...!'

"Hey, Danica, heard a pack of Hollows got a hold of some S. D. students." said a purple haied girl.

The girl named Danica laughed. "Wonder if they'll kill the Halfbreeds. Or even just devour their souls. Not that they have any."

MeMe stood up and ran out the room. She ran down the halls and out the door. She needed to stop this. Before it got out of hand. Before someone died. Again.

\* \* \*

"Fallen strike!" A whirlwind of power cut three hollow into pieces. Kaj was then pelted with small jellyfish like creatures. "whut the--?!" They exploded, sending her back into a tree.

Envi punched, kicked, and blew up countless Hollows. But the bastards just kept coming. 'Command: High gear; pace= 1-8.' Her eyes adjusted and everything slowed down, or rather, she sped up. For speed had quadrupled, and she was fighting at an almost impossible speed. She looked at the other two, then fire exploded through a Hollow.

"Man, you guys have all the fun." said Elen. A hollow came at her from behind, but burst into flames. With Elen came Els, and two girls that had just come to the school the day before. Burnidette (aka Burn) Lyn, and Daiserei (Daisy) Vinerele.

"Let's show them we ain't no pushovers girls." said Envi.

\* \* \*

"Tidal strike!" Lake water rained on the monsters, but before it could make contact, they turned into icicles and impaled them. She saw from behind an attack, and made a wall of ice.

After grueling minutes that seemed like hours, some of the Hollows began to retreat. It was a significant number, but the girls were a little relieved. There were only, at leas a hundred of them left.

Envi punched, blasted and kicked through the numbers. Then a group pinned her on the ground. "Nullify Blaster!" The demons froze where they were and then collasped on the ground. Their masks burned into ash, and their bodies disappeared. Another barrage came at her, and Envi was running a little low on

blasts. ' Velocity Alter: Gear shift 1-8.' Everything slowed down, or rather, Envi sped up. She bashed 17 hollows in a matter of seconds, and without them noticing her.

Kaj and Elen attacked back-to-back sending a hurricane of fire at them. A Hollow armed with an axe came at them and split the pair up. They jumped into other parts of the field, and were on their own. Flying hollows rained on them, catching them off guard. Elen smirked. She clicked her fingers and 1/3 of the flying Hollows went up in flames. Kaj jumped up in the air and landed on the back on a Hollow. A ground Hollow spat something at them, it landed on both Kaj and the flier. "Wtf?!"

Small jellyfish like creatures clung to them. "Heh heh..." They exploded, sending Kaj over the side and to the ground. They were closing in on her, when she released the seal on Wes. The small pup turned into a behemoth and roared its fangs at the Hollows.

\* \* \*

Burn dodged the blows the Hollows were throwing, reading their movements as well as their minds. They ended up striking and destroying each other, just like Burn wanted. A hollow attacked from her blind spot. His huge clawed hand was about to rake across her body when Daisy intercepted. Her lavender eyes locking onto the Hollow's black soulless voids.

"Stop!" she commanded. She pointed to a group of Hollows closing in on Chii. "Attack them!" He did as he was told, clearing a path for Chii's next attack.

Chii pulled out ten scrolls, and on each one she streaked her blood on them. "Hundred head dragon! God's hand~jutsu!!" Thousands upon thousands of shuriken and kunai knives showered on the monsters, papers charms tied to them. The souls were purified and sent to the soul society. Gasping for air, the young ninja was nearly out of Chakra. A body crashed into a tree not too far from Chii. The hollow attacked Jazmyn as she tried to stand up from the debris.

"Where is Taiyoko?!" a hollow snarled at Jazmyn.

Jazmyn just smiled. "I don't know any Taiyokos." She screamed as the Hollow slammed her into the ground, shattering a few ribs.

"I'll ask again, Haaaaaaaalfbreed." He stretched out the words, while squeezing her body. "Where. Is. Taiyoko?"

"Over my dead body." she gasped.

"RAAAAUGH!!!" The Hollow slammed her into the ground again, burying her in rock and dirt. Then he pulled her up by her hair. "That can be arranged."

"Heaven's kiss!" A flock of white butterflies came at the hollow, exploding on contact. Jazmyn fell to the ground, gasping on her hands and knees. "ZiZi-neesama!"

"MeMe...?" Jazmyn's blood stung as it made contact with her eyes. "Why are you here?! I told you to stay in the dorm."

"But ZiZi-neeChan... I--" Started MeMe. She was cut off short when a monster struck from behind. "Aieeee!" Both girls flew into a tree, Jazmyn taking on most of the damage because she had shielded the girl. She went unconscious, barely alive. "JAZMYN!!!"

The Hollow came at them again, his clawed hand out for Jazmyn. MeMe outstretched her hands, and shouted out another spell. "LUMIUS DAS DESTROIX!!!" His arm exploded in a rain of white and yellow butterflies. "ANGELIUS CELESTRIUS!" The hollows were blinded and were sent screaming out of the field, back into the shadows.

\* \* \*

The next day, all 9 girls were in the infirmary. Envi sat on a table as Zim worked on her wiring, reattaching her circuits and replenishing what had been damaged. She flexed her metallic arms, which were now visible because the skinlike latex had been destroyed. She looked up to see everyone else mildly hurt. Jazmyn walked with MeMe to them. Everyone's eyes immediately turned to Jazmyn's arms. Both bandaged up to the shoulders, and both her fore arms broken, but not in slings.

"I was just trying to help Zizi-neeSama." said MeMe, wringing her hands. She had barely a scratch on her, but a few stitches here and there, and her head was bandaged.

"I'd smack you if i could lift my arms." she said flatly. "You put yourself in danger, Miruko. Those weren't ghosts or Imps. Those were souls of the damned MeMe!"

"But they left! Good thing I've been practicing my spells, huh, Neesama--" said MeMe. BAM! Instead of slapping the girl, Jazmyn had hit her head against MeMe's. "OWIE!!!"

"YOU COULD OF DIED DUMBASS!" she exploded. "I'm the older sister! I can take care of myself and you! So let me do it!"

The nurse handed MeMe an icepack for the growing bulb on the back of her head. "Okay..." she murmured. "Hey! Today's game day and they have a DDR machine in the Cafeteria!" All of the girls let out long moans. They were bandaged and hurting, and the runt wanted to play videogames. "Come on Neesama!" She grabbed her arm, then Jazmyn winced. "Tsumimasen!"

"Fine." Jazmyn rolled her eyes. "Let's go play."

\* \* \*

"Here let me help you." MeMe said, punching in the level for both of them. Standard.

"Holy-- I can't play standard with my arms like this MeMe!" said Jazmyn. "That's practically a full body movement song!"

"Songs... Songs... oh! Here we go! Butterfly! Upswing Mix!" MeMe was too excited to listen to Jazmyn. She pressed enter, then the song began.

"You dog!" Jazmyn snarled. The pace was slow for the first 20 seconds, then the pace doubled each second. And with the game on standard the girls were to step on half beats as well. "I'll drop kick you when I'm done!" MeMe wasn't listening still, she was humming and singing and moving her body like a real dancer. Meanwhile Jazmyn was having trouble keeping up, her arms were killing her, when the song ended she was relieved. She was pissed when MeMe picked another song on Standard. Oh, but not just any song, it was the Hampster dance. Speedy Mix.

MeMe smiled at Jazmyn, She smiled wildly, laughing and her eyes gleaming. Jazmyn winced, as her arms swayed and jolts of pain went up her body. 'This is nothing!' A voice in her head cried out. 'Remember that time you fell from a two story window? And broke your leg? You powered right through that. Remember??' Jazmyn took in a deep breath and ground her teeth. She put her entire body into the movements, jumping when she had to press 2 arrows at the same time. By the end, MeMe and Jazmyn looked like a pair of Para Para dancers. The third song they chose was Sweet Sweet Magic by ~Jun.

When the song ended, Jazmyn leaned against the bar, and looked at the scores as they rolled across the screen. Jazmyn and MeMe both got A's. "You do not know how much fanservice you were giving." said a voice.

"Why? 'cuz of our skirts, no big deal." She turned to who was speaking. "How did you get in here?" Jazmyn sighed, too tired to ask.

"Eh. Just wanted to see you." He looked at her bandaged arms. "You're bleeding."

She lifted up her hand and looked at her knuckles. Blood had traveled down from her shoulders, down her arms all the way to her hands. Jazmyn shrugged. "I really didn't notice." Chase took her hand and licked off the blood. She withdrew her hand from his grasp. "That's gross. For all you know I could have Herpes."

Chase stood on the stage and leaned forward, whispering in her ear. "I got your first kiss, and last time I checked, girls who don't know how to kiss, usually don't know how to--"

"Shut up!" Jazmyn snapped. Chase laughed then turned to MeMe.

"Who's the Midget?" he asked.

"Miaruko Sol." said MeMe extending her hand to shake. "I'm Jazmyn little sister. "Nice to make your acquaintance."

"Like wise." Chase said, shaking her hand.

"WTF?! Why is he suddenly so nice?!" Jazmyn winced when her injuries finally caught up with her. "Oh, G.D."

\* \* \*

school gymnasium

Chii threw three shuriken at the bulls eye, all three hitting the center. She took in a deep breath and bit

back the pain. They were nothing, heal by tomorrow by the most. But a ninja of her rank wasn't accustomed to this much pain. When Chii was finished with her target practice, she sat on the floor and unwrapped her arm.

"Oh shoot." She ran to the bathroom. Turning on the faucet, she brought a kunai knife to her arm. Chii didn't do many rash things without thinking, but this... One of the Hollows had infected her with poison which had colored her skin an ugly purplish color. She cut into her arm, and immediately her demon DNA pushed out the infected blood. Her blood was now a black-purple color, that burst into flames when it hit the water. When it was finished, Chii's arm closed up good as new.

"I hope none of the others were poisoned." she sighed. Chii walked out of the gymnasium and down the hall. She stopped at the Cafeteria to see the DDR players. She spotted Jazmyn and MeMe dancing full bodied, despite their injuries. Chii saw that in the crowd of watchers was a few boys. "How did they get here?" Chii shrugged. She turned to the hall and looked out te window.

"Chii-nee-chan!" said a voice. It was Els. "The team lists are up, want to go look?"

"Yeah, sure."

\* \* \*

"Life shouldn't cost this much!" Delia cried out. "Papa... you have to let us go!" Her fathers arms wrapped around her. "If you truly loved us, you'd let us pass on!" Her father looked at her, tears in his eyes.

"...Fine..." He sighed. When he pulled away, Delia couldn't move. She yelped as a jolt of something travelled through her. "...I'll just need to take you apart. Piece by piece."

Kaj opened her eyes and looked at the board. These dreams were coming closer and closer together. What did it all mean?

"Kajinyo, what is the answer?" asked the Teacher.

"Mercury b-2." said Kaj, closing her eyes again. Even if she was asleep, she was only half asleep and could hear the teacher quite well. They had been discussing water and it's qualities, and they chemicals that it could contain."

The teacher groaned a bit, taken aback by the fact Kaj was listening. Kaj glanced over at Envi, who, using a screw driver and small welding pen, was fixing something in her arm. No one had noticed, so Envi kept going. She didn't take notes in class, she recorded the teachers voice then wrote it down later, and deleted the recordings. When class ended, the girls left, and Kaj approached Envi.

"What're you doing?" she asked.

"There's something gnawing at my nerves. It's really starting to hurt." Envi said, flexing her hand and wrist. "Damn it." Kaj took Envi's hand and led her to a microscope. She pulled a damaged wire out and looked at it.

"Does your body have Anti-bodies?" she asked, adjusting the microscope. Envi shook her head. "Then make some. You have a virus... Looks like it's from the Hollows last night."

\* \* \*

"MeMe I can't." Jazmyn said, flatly. "We already danced, raced, threw darts, and even painted." Jazmyn swayed her entire body, her arms still at her sides. "I'm pretty sure their dead."

"Cooooooooome oooooooooon!" MeMe whined. There was a trampoline in the field, not too far where the Hollows had attacked. And MeMe wanted to play on it. "I want to jump! really high!"

"Go ahead. I'll watch you." said Jazmyn. followed her. The ten year old climbed in the enclosed area and began jumpin with the other girls. She bent her legs then pushed off as hard as she could when the other girls landed. MeMe was well above the betting, and she waved at Jazmyn. She did at least four more of these high jumps, laughing like a maniac. Then, there was a gust of wind. It pushed her away from the trampoline and the netting.

"NEESAMA!!" she screamed as she fell, from twelve feet up.

"MeMe-chan!" Jazmyn ran under the trampoline an slid across the grass, and spread her body out to catch her. BAM!! "Oh hot damn!"

"I'm sorry Neesama! The wind... it pushed me!" MeMe helped Jazmyn stand. "I'm sorry."

Jazmyn stood and looked at her, again on the verge of tears. Jazmyn gently tapped her on her shoulder with her foot, because her arms still hurt. "I'm fine. Come-on, it's almost time for dinner."

\* \* \*

When MeMe followed Jazmyn and Chii to their room to say goodnight, all three were suprised to find all their things packed and set up neatly outside the room. The girls who were moving Jazmyn and Chii's stuff told them they had been transferred to another room.

"Why?" asked Jazmyn.

"You share your new room with your squads." said a third year Shadow student. "Here's the room number." She handed Jazmyn a folded up piece of paper.

They walked down the halls, lost, then found the right hall and finally (after twenty minutes of being lost) they found their new room. "WOW!!" It was alot bigger then their last room, infact, it ws like a suite. There was a small kitchen (sink, mini fridge, hot plate, and a table that would seat fhree), a bathroom, (a sink, toilet, and a shower stall), and two seperate bedrooms, Each room having two twin beds.

The door opened and Kaj and Envi walked in. "Huzzah. We're roomies." said Jazmyn, flatly.

"That's not a Huzzah..." MeMe said, "This is a Huzzah." She stood on a chair. "HUZZAH!"

"Get down, before I kick the chair from under you." she said, still flat. "Hey, it's past eight. Go back to your room MeMe-chan."

"Okay." She jumped off the chair and ran to Jazmyn. She hugged her around the waist, "Good night, ZiZi-neesama."

Jazmyn bent over and kissed her on the top of her head. "Night."

"Night." She skipped out the room, happily humming the DDR song Butterfly. MeMe arrived in her new dorm, along with her three roommates. It was like Jazmyn's, same kitchennette, bathroom, and bedrooms. She looked out the window, tired, and nervous. 'How could you go so far, NenTar? How could you?'

\* \* \*

Over the next week, MeMe fit in quite well. She followed most of the lessons and classes. She had lunch with the Shadow Division. She was scolded by upper clamen for this, but she ignored them. The attack on them was almost forgotten. The only thing that bothered them was that, for some wiered reason, Jazmyn's wrists hadn't healed completely. They were sore when she moved her arms, and she had the bandage them everyday. Kaj saw something was bothering both MeMe and Jazmyn, but she didn't know what. So she decided to attack the problem head on.

\* \* \*

"These Hollows are no normal Hollows." said Chii. Sitting on the floor, she shifted from her position to a folded leg sit. "These... Their something else. Like they barely have a soul left."

"But aren't those what Hollows are?? Hollowed out souls, nothing good or lively left in them?" asked Jazmyn, lying on her stomach on the floor, looking sideways at them.

"What Chii means is that they don't think. They just kept attacking, like mindless zombies." said Kaj. "Hollows are cunning, and devious and love to play cruel games. These ones just wanted to kill us... or should I say... Miaruko?" Their eyes turned to Jazmyn. "Why don't you tell us the real reason why MeMe is here?"

Jazmyn sighed. "She's not a witch. She's a Fallen."

"An angel?!" asked Envi. "That's not true is it?!"

"If she were an angel, she shouldn't have been hurt when the Hollow knocked you two into the tree." said Chii.

"I said Fallen. Not Angel." Jazmyn propped her head up on her chin. "When we first met, I was about six. MeMe's real form looks like a grown woman and her name was GalaTea. But coming down to Earth, she took on the form of a six year old. MeMe said she would be my friend, forever and ever. And the ones up stairs said no, and they called her back. She refused, and said she wanted to be human. This fight went

on for four years, but in her world only four days. So when she came back, I was older and she feared I might not remember her. But of course I remembered, and we became unseperable. Until someone wanted to adopt her. MeMe said she wouldn't leave me again, but I said I wouldn't forgive her if she wasn't happy with a family, because a sister can only give her so much love. She was wounded and they did a blood transfusion. Which none of the others approved. She she was thrown out of Heaven, I grew older and the orphanage decided to send me off to different schools to keep me away." Jazmyn yawned. "And here we are now."

Kaj looked out the window, "Hey! Someone's outside!"

"What?" They all looked out the window. "shoot. It's MeMe."

"We have to go get her before those Hollows come back!" said Chii.

"We need back up." said Kaj. "but we need to be quiet so we don't get in trouble or cause a panic."

"Okay." they all agreed. The only other students that had fought with the Hollows were told. All eight of them met outside the gym, then spanned out into the forest to find Miruko.

\* \* \*

"GalaTea." spoke a voice. The ten year old turned to look at the source. A man sat in a tree, plad in a white suit, and black shirt. He had Silver hair and white and silver wings. His eyes were emerald, and he had tan skin. "Long time no see."

"NenTar, why are you doing this?" she asked. Her black hair blowing in the wind. "Why can't you leave us alone?"

"I've come to offer you your job back." said NenTar. He shifted his position on the branch. "Seems Dianne wants you back Home."

"Dianne?" MeMe shifted her feet. 'Sister...? Why now of all times?' She looked up at NenTar. "Fine. But you have to call off the Hollows."

NenTar snapped his fingers. "As good as done."

"MeMe!" shouted a voice. Jazmyn came running up. She hugged the girl, gasping for air. "Why the hell are you out this late?!"

"Hmm?"NenTar looked at Jazmyn. She looked back at him. "Come along Tea. Dianne awaits." His wings spread out and he jumped from the branch. He landed a few feet away from MeMe and Jazmyn. Jazmyn glared at him, but held MeMe tighter.

"She's not goin with you." she snarled, her golden eyes glowing.

"You have to say in this demon!!" NenTar snapped. His green eyes began glowing. Jazmyn began gasping for air and gripping at an unseen force around her neck.



MeMe ran to him. "NenTar! Stop it!" she cried out. "You're killing her!"

NenTar looked away from Jazmyn and to MeMe. A scowl on his face, NenTar, let go of his psychic hold on Jazmyn. She breathed easier. "Let's go." He grabbed her arm, and they began to walk away.

"I...Said... she's not... going... with you!" she came at NenTar. He turned around and sent a wave of power at her. "Miaruko!"

Dark shadows began to formulate around Jazmyn. "Finish her off." said Nentar. "Devour her."

"You said you wouldn't kill her!" MeMe shouted, trying to pull free. NenTar tightened his grasp, and pulled her close.

"Little girl. I said so such thing. Let's go see Dear sister Dianne now, shall we?" NenTar smiled.

\* \* \*

"Miaruko!!!" Jazmyn screamed. Fury burned inside her. That bastard was back! And he had taken MeMe! "MIARUKO!!!"

Again they fought like hell with the Hollows, breaking and smashing the masks and breaking the bonds. Using the Heaven Dragon attacks, Chii sent hundreds of weapons and charms flying. Kaj and Elen burned them to bits, Burn and Daisy sent them attacking each other and Envi blew them away. Els sent a wave of water at them, freezing them. Then she sent the water up into the sky to form a path over the army and into the woods.

"Go get your sis. We got them covered." said Envi. When she turned around, a large Hollow came at her. She smirked at his attempt to attack. "RAAAAAUGH!!!" Her fist sent him back into six other Hollows, destroying them.

"Hai." Jazmyn jumped on the ice path and followed NenTar and MeMe into the forest.

\* \* \*

"You said you wouldn't NenTar!!!" she screamed, trying to writh from his grip. "WHY?! WHY?!!!"

"This is exactly the reason Rueban demanded you out." He said, dragging her behind him. "You care too much about these meat puppets." NenTar stopped midstep, then ducked. Flying by his head came Jazmyn. "Especially this puppet."

"Give her back!" she demanded. NenTar glared at her without blinking. He let go of MeMe's hand then came at her. Nen struck with such force, it shattered most of her ribs with one punch. "Ugh!!!" She flew into a tree. Nen turned back to MeMe. Smiling after seeing the fear in her eyes. He grabbed her hand then began walking again. "Give... my sister... back..!" she groaned. "puh-please...!" she threw up blood.

"Don't get up." said Nen. "It's better to live, knowing you failed her again, then to die and suffer forever."

Another angel came and took MeMe's hand. She began to lead her to a gate where they would be teleported to another world. Their world. Nen turned back to Jazmyn. "Eclair." A french Sabor appeared in his hand, and he approached the girl. "Now, to finish what we started."

"Nen!!!" Screamed MeMe. "Noo!"

He raised the sword and struck down. Blood sprayed across a tree. Horror spread over her as the body fell to see...

someone gets hurt, read the next chapter to find out!!

## 8 - Never Again

### chapter five: Never Again

A ear piercing scream filled the air. The Hollows retreated into the forest. The girls followed close after, ready to finish their job. Standing up, Jazmyn had her back to them. A man with a sword was staning in front of her, the sword itself bloodied. Jazmyn turned her head to them, blood splatter all over her face.

"Help." she moaned. Kaj and Envi went for the man dressed in white, but he dodged. Seconds in between blinking he appeared behind them and knocked them both into the ground. Elen and Chii went to check on her, seeing that she was all right, the girls noticed what was in her arms. Little MeMe had a huge gash across her chest, blood spilling out like it was nothing. Bloodied and limp, Miaruko was grasping for life against Jazmyn. "Miaruko...!"

Chii turned to him, her silver eyes ablaze with fury. "BASTARD!!" She unfurled a scroll and it rained paper charms. He smirked at her attack, but she wasn't finished. She drew a symbol on another charm and threw it on a kunai. The charms reacted with each other, sending the man back with an explosion. Paper bombs. "SHE WAS ONLY A CHILD!!"

Elen shot out fire, giant flames licked at him, but he dodged easily. He deflected the magic back at Kaj, laughing the entire time. Kaj broke the fire apart, taking away its life and making it harmless. Envi ran for him, her body adjusting to his speed, but he was still too fast. With one punch, he shattered her entire left arm. Metal, wires and false skin burned into nothing, then he came at her again. Daisy got in his face and ordered him to stop. Her spells only worked for a few seconds, then he sent her flying into the air.

Els knelt next to MeMe and Jazmyn, using her abilities over water to try and heal her. MeMe gripped her hand, painfully telling her to stop. "Arigatou...Etsuko-nee-chan...!" A Hollow attacked from behind, sending Els into battle. "Arigatou Oneesama..." She licked her lips, trying to clear away the blood from her mouth. "...I'm sorry I didn't listen... I..."

"Shut up!" Jazmyn snapped. "You're wasting your breath MeMe-chan!" Jazmyn tore her night gown and pressed the fabric against the girl's chest. Blood began seeping onto her pajama pants. "Shut up!"

"...I've been causing you nothing but trouble..." MeMe's eyes welled with bloody tears. "And now this...!" She coughed, more blood splattering on Jazmyn's clothes. "...I just wanted to say, thank you for loving me like you did... Ah...Te..." Miaruko's smile held, even when her amethyst eyes faded into gray-rose.

"Miaruko!" she whispered. "...Tea...! GalaTea!" Jazmyn hugged the body close to her. Tears streamed down, for words were too hard. Then the horrible happened. MeMe's body began to disappear. Disintegrate into nothing. "MEME!!!!!!!"

\* \* \*

"I luv you..."

We'll be together forever...  
Sissy!...  
Oneechaaaaaan!  
Konichiwa!  
Look at the cat! Let's call him Harusame!  
I look like sailormoon with this hair style! heh heh  
Haru-kun!  
Jazzi-chan!  
Jazzi-chan!!  
JAZZY!!!

"Wake up." said a voice. Jazmyn looked up and saw a mouth and lips. No body, no face, no features.  
"Give them what they deserve."

"No...! We can't...!" Jazmyn whispered. Her hands outstretched, a sword formed in each. They looked like Japanese katanas but were different. The handles were black and white and curved for better grip, and the blades were curved up and out. "...Roex...Lyra..."

\* \* \*

Nen held Kaj by the collar of her shirt, three feet above the ground. "Little ragdoll dog." Nen smirked. "You really think you can fight me?" He turned to the others who were hurt and lying on the ground. He looked into her eyes, and saw something. "...So that's who you are..." His arm was sliced off, and a surprised scream escaped his mouth. Nen turned to see that damn girl again. Nen's blood felt out for his forearm and then it healed. He summoned Eclair and came at her again. She dodged easily and used her two swords to block, evade and shield his attacks. Something was off about her. "Ecleon!" Jolts of electricity passed through the sword, and through Jazmyn's body.

She grinned, showing off her fangs. "ROXAS!!" The electricity passed then flew to a tree. The confusion on Nen's face gave her an opening. She kicked him, she was almost as strong as Nen. This much power. "LYRIAS!!" She brought the sword upward, cutting up his suit. Whatever it was, the halfbreed wasn't controlling it any longer. Nen tried to retreat, opening his wings and readying to fly away. She groaned and sliced half of his wing off. "You're not going anywhere, Nenny."

"That voice!" he gasped. She pointed Roex (the white handled sword) at him. "Hmph!" Nen laughed. "You of all people... you don't have the guts."

"Why did you kill her?" he snarled. "She didn't need to die Nenny."

"Are you just mad you couldn't protect her again?!" snapped the angel. "You're the reason she couldn't come back, Julin." Nen laughed even harder, the matter seemed hilarious to him. "Because of your stupidity. These... puppets! She cared so damn much about... And then you filled her with these damn emotions! She became something beneath herself!"

"How was it your decision to kill her?" he said, level headed. He turned to his companions, on the edge

of life and fighting as hard as they could. He raised Lyra and called out her name, "Lyrian." They were healed, then he turned back to the wounded angel. "You're done here." He turned away and walked over to Kaj. Nen was furious. He summoned Eclair and charged for him. Roex struck him across the chest. "frack! You just don'tlisten do you?!" He put Roex and Lyra against his throat, like a pair of giant scissors. "I am wondering why the fracking hell Dianne put you in charge of her council. When you can't even handle two Fallens." Nen growled. He snapped his fingers and the tips of Nen's wings were healed. "You. Are. Done. Here.Nenny."

The Angel growled, but knew he had been beaten. Nen teleported away, back to his world. "There any reason to all this Madness, eh, Julin?" asked Maniac. Julin looked at the man. Green eyes, and black spiked hair whose bangs covered one eye. He was dressed in a white button down shirt and blue jeans. "What are you going to do next?"

"That's for her to decide now isn't it?" Julin replied. With that, he let her take over. Maniac felt the dark aura; the hatred, the pain and sorrow. She looked at him, but didn't say anything. Jazmyn collapsed on the ground, blood spilling from her wounds. "...Mia...ruko..."

\* \* \*

'Hello... My name is Miaruko, what's yours?' asked the pink haired woman.

'Jazmyn.; she replied. 'You're very pretty.' Jazmyn smiled. Soon her smile faded. 'Where are you going?! MeMe! Come back!!' Jazmyn's hands were outstretched, trying to take her hand. Miaruko smiled, then in a flash of pink and gold butterflies, she was gone. "MeeeeMeeeeee!!'

'You need to calm down.Onesama...I'll be okay...' MeMe whispered. MeMe pecked Jazmyn on the lips. 'Everything will end out alright.'

\* \* \*

Everyone was, once again, in the infirmary. But the only one who was severely damaged was Envi, whose arm had been taken off. She was pissed. Parts like hers were hard to find, even if Zim was helping her. The best he could do was give her a temporary replacement until the school sent out the orders for the parts. Which pissed her off even more. The replacement didn't look like a real arm. It was the arm of one of the boy's battle machines (not that it wasn't cool or anything) it just looked wierd attached to her). Only a few inches wide, it was made from simple gears, wires and metal parts. Mainly from a vacuum cleaner and television.

"Weren't you here a few days ao?" asked Zim, redoing the job he had just done before.

"You're short." Envi replied. She knew the comment would shut him up. She didn't feel like chit-chat today, especially after what happened.

"That was really mean Envi-neeChan." said Chii. She looked at her hands, faded paper cuts covered her palms. "...What are we going to do?"

"We can't do anything. You heard Mr. Phillip. Until her mind and body quit fighting eachother, there's no

way in hell for her to wake up." said Envi. She flexed her arm, it's gears wurred loudly. She sighed, then turned back to Chii. "She's might as well be dead too."

"You should trade in for a new body." said Zim, whipping his hands on a thick cloth. "Maybe something with NaNoTech."

Envi looked at her hands. How different they were, it bothered her greatly. "Hmm... Maybe... " She slid off the table and followed Chii out the room. "Thanks Zim. Sorry about the short crack."

"Uh-hmm." he said, sucking on a snax stick. "Whatever."

When they went back to the dorm, Jazmyn's was up and about. She looked at them when they entered, but then went back to what she was doing. She was fixing her hair into a long french braid, which almost reached the center of her back.

"What do you want to do today Jazzi-neec--" Started Chii, but was cut short when Jazmyn pulled out a pair of scissors and cut off her braid. "NANI~~?!!"

"WTF Jazmyn?!" said Envi. "Why would you do that?!!" She ran her fingers though her shortened hair. It was just an inch or two from being shoulder length. Envi grabbed Jazmyn's shirt collar with her good arm. "Why did you do that?!" Jazmyn looked away, her eyes dull and blank. "Answer me damnit!"

"I need to change." She slipped out of the shirt like a snake, Envi's hand still on the collar, and walked to her room. She put on a plastic head band and school uniform. She was glad of it's dark colors. She picked up the braid from the floor and threw it in the trash. Her tone monotonous, "Are you coming? We're going to be late."

Envi and Chii looked at eachother. Maybe this was how she dealt with things. She gave herself a new look, then acted like nothing happened. Now that she got it past her, maybe everything will return back to normal. They grabbed their bags and then left for their classes. By the middle of the day, she had had it.

"Excuse me... Dean Dreamer?" Jazmyn knocked gently on the door. Fiona wasn't at her desk, so Jazmyn took the initiative to knock herself.

"Come in Miss Lun." she said. She opened the door, and sat down in a leather chair again. Jazmyn slouched in the chair, but she kept her eyes at Dreamer's level. "What seems to be the problem?"

"Could I take the next week off?" she asked. "I'm not feeling up to it."

"...That's right... Your sister..." Dreamer scribbled something down on a letter. "Phillip already filled me in... But I might have to decline on the offer. What about your homework and classes?"

Jazmyn thought for a moment. "What if I have someone fill in for me?"

\* \* \*

Burn, Daisy, Kaj and Elen sat in an oak tree. Each one of them were on different branches, looking out at the lake and the area where they had fought. There were terrakinetics moving rocks and making saplings grow. Burn shouted when Chii landed on her branch and swayed it a bit.

"So, what's up?" Chii asked.

"Eh," Burn replied. "What happened last night? I remember fighting the guy in white." The window blew her dirty blonde hair around her head. "Everything else is pretty much a blur."

"I think we can all agree to that..." said Chii, her mind was also a blank. And even though she had searched the school grounds herself, there had been no more Hollow sightings. "But it was wierd... I felt something from that guy... 'Nen' or whatever his name was. He wasn't a demon."

"What?!" Burn nearly shouted. "He almost killed us all last night! How can he not be a demon?!"

"He could have been a corrupt air spirit. I've been learning about them in Ancient Myths and Origins class." said Daisy.

"Naw. Corrupts turn into demons or Hollows in a matter of hours. He was pure." Chii rubbed her arms, a chilly breeze rushing up her back. '...He made Ooka-dono quiver in fear... and she never feels that way towards anything... not even a Kyuubi or Tanuki...'

Kaj shifted her weight on the branch. She looked at her hands. Last night she was sure the guy had beat the bloody hell out of them, but now they were all healed up good as new. "...I was wondering... Should I keep up my illusion shield?" She bounced on the branch, causing it to sway. "This look.. it just ain't me. And it's a waste of magic." She swayed, then in a flash of flames became her true form. She turned to them.

Elen yawned, then did the same. Her light green eyes turned neon and two small ramlike horns sprouted on her head. Daisy's solid black hair streaked with lavender, and her soft slate eyes turned amethyst. They each lowered their illusions, showing off their true forms. They looked at each other, then laughed. Elen rocked back and forth on the branch.

"Hey! Kaj!" she called out. Kaj turned her head to face the other fire demon. "What's up with the demi-wings?"

Kaj shrugged. "Why?"

"They don't look like they're attached to your back." she said. "Can you use them?"

"No, not really. I can jump higher than a normal demon though." Kaj said. "Hey there's Envi."

They waved to her. "You all look like birds." she said flatly.

"You're just mad because you aren't up here." said Chii. "Where's Els?"

"Swimming off a detention because she was hanging out with us." said Burn. "I got one too... I have to

clap all the erasers in the school for the next 2 weeks."

Envi readied her legs and jumped into the tree. She landed next to Daisy who was reading from the rule book. "Aww damn!" she hissed. "I can't believe this!"

"What?" asked Envi.

"Did you know if you're in the Shadow Division you can't date anyone unless they're in the Shadow Division themselves?" said Daisy.

"Eh, that rule is one of many we ignore. It's just a way for them to keep us Halfbreeds in order." said Kaj. She saw the blush on Daisy's face. "Unless you already broke that rule! What's his name?!"

"Ash Trent." She held her face as she blushed wildly. "I absolutely love him to death!!"

"Ooh! What is he? Animus? Elemental? Gifted human?" asked Burn.

"Human... And half elf!" Daisy laughed. The school bell rang and the lunch hour was over. They all headed to Mr. Night's class, where they were starting a new lesson on Hollows.

\* \* \*

"With the loss of a student, and the injuries of others, the Deans have decided to speed up your curriculum and start to tell you about Hollows, Spirits, Demons and their differences." Night picked up a piece of chalk and began writing on the board. "And if any students make any wise @\$@ remarks, they can go stand out in the hall, and receive three detentions."

There was a knock at the door, Mr. Night opened it and a student walked in. At first, Chii thought it was Jazmyn with her hair down and in her face, but the student combed back the hair with their hands to reveal it was a boy. He wore the school jacket, but a white blouse and dark jeans. He handed Mr. Night a note. He read it quickly then reached on his desk and gave the boy a stack of folders.

"Is this all?" asked the boy.

"Yeah. Remember. Four o'clock sharp." said Mr. Night, still writing on the board.

"Right." He turned around and left, closing the door gently. 'Is this really what you want, little girl?' He ran his fingers through his hair, it's unevenness really upsetting him. 'You really didn't need to do this either.'

\* \* \*

When school was over, and everything was quiet. After lunch, hours before, Jazmyn had disappeared. Without a word, or note, she just skipped lunch and wasn't in any of her classes after that. With the death of MeMe, her friends wondered how the young vampire was handling all this. Daisy, Elen and Burn were scouting the forest, when they suddenly stumbled on their battle ground. Tree trunks split, rocks and dirt tossed and broken into pieces. There was a darkened spot on the ground, dried blood.



"Little Girls shouldn't be out so late." said a boy. They looked up to see him sitting in a tree. Reading some paperback book, he spoke again. "Looking for anything in particular? Maybe I can help?"

"What did you do to her?" asked Daisy to the boy. "Where are you hiding her?"

He looked up from the book he was reading. "I'm not hiding." He stood up on the branch, jumping to the ground he held out the book to Elen. "I borrowed it from Kaj. Tell her I said thank you." Elen took the paperback, and before she could say anything he was gone.

As they debated of whether or not to follow him, suddenly Burn said, "She's okay." The wind blew her head around her face. Burn took out a ponytail holder and fastened her dirty blond hair back. "He's no threat either."

"You sure?" asked Daisy, shifting her weight from foot to foot.

"Yeah... because he let me read his mind." Burn shrugged. "His aura wasn't demonic or like that 'Nen' guy from last night."

"Well, if that's all, I'm going home." said Daisy with a yawn. "I got to get ready for my secret date with Ash..."

"Ahh yesh. Your not so Shadow Division boyfriend who is part elf." said Elen. "I too have a date. With my oh so Shadow Division boyfriend. Damien." Elen turned to Burn. "Are you coming?"

Burn looked a little lost in her thoughts. "Hmm? Yeah, I'll catch up later." The demon and the vampire turned and dashed into the trees. She turned to a large oak tree, whose branches were splintered and bark was torn clear off. "You can come out now."

The figure went ridged against the structure. "Will you tell on me?" she asked, her voice barely audible.

"Why? Did you do anything wrong?" asked Burn, looking around the side of the tree. The little figure moved, still trying to hide from her. "Come out now. I promise you won't get in trouble. Why are you out here anyways?"

Two little golden eyes looked at her. "I'm waiting for my RuRu--kun." she said. The figure came into view for Burn to see. A little girl, possibly only six years old. Dressed in a white spaghetti strap sundress with a widebrimmed sunhat. "He said not to talk to any strangers."

"Well my name's Burnidette Lynn. My friends call me Burn." She extended her hand to the girl. "Now I'm not a stranger, mind telling me your name?"

"Tita." she said. Burn felt something. She reached forward and grabbed Tita's arm. They were both sent across the field when something struck them. Burn looked to see a Hollow. Tita gripped Burn's uniform tightly. "Don't let them take me...! The Empties...!"

Burn shook violently. The vibes she was getting off this creature were so murderous, and evil. The mask opened showing off the three rows of shark like teeth. "Nour..ish...ment..." it hissed. "I will consume

you... Body and soul!!"

## 9 - Fighting Spirit

### chapter six: Fighting Spirit

Burn pushed off the ground flying threw the air and landing ten feet away, the girl's sunhat flying off her head. She held Tita tightly against her body, Burn turned and ran. Her speed rivalled most of the other girls at Mercedes, but she had not the strength like theirs. Burn also lacked much ability to cast spells, but that didn't stop her. She was a great strategist, defeating her opponents with traps and puzzles. Trees and ground exploded around her as the Hollow struck.

"RAAAAUGH!!!" His huge claw struck them both, sending them into the ground. Tita was thrown from her arms and near the lake's edge. The Hollow approached Burn, a huge fangful grin showing. "A human soul will moisten my appetite!" He grinned at Tita. "Then I'll come for you... my little Angel."

Tita intervned the attacked on Burn, making a barrier around them. Using a deck of tarot cards, she channeled her magic to form a shield around both of them. She screamed as the Hollow pounded on the shield. It shattered breaking the bond and Burn and Tita watched in Horror as all fifty-two cards turned to ash. His jaws came down on both of them. But, to their surprise it didn't hurt. The mask split in half, and his body turned into nothing. Burn and Tita turned to see a boy dressed in a Alejandro uniform. He had brown hair, fair skin, blue eyes and a tattoo under his right eye.

"Are you okay?" he asked, lifting up his spear so it was propped on his shoulder. "Any reason you two are out so late?"

Tita sat on the ground inspecting her bloodied knee. She looked up at the boy. "Thank you very much sir." she smiled. He knelt to her height. Then looked at her scraped up leg. He took out a bandana from his pocket and tied it around her leg. Then she smiled at Burn. "You're well I trust, Miss Lynn?"

Burn didn't recognize the boy. "Yeah." She held out her hand for Tita, "I better take you back to school.. see where you came from." As Burn began walking, a tree branch flew in front of her. It crashed into the lake, splashing water on all three of them. "Hot damn." They looked up to see two boys fom Alejandro's fighting on the trees. Jumping from branch to branch, they were so fast, their forms were barely visible.

"God damnit Chase! Why don't you watch where your clumsy @\$ is going!" snarled the boy. Chase laughed, then dove for his opponent. They both fell back into the forest with a loud crash. "You two better come with me to change out of those clothes. My name's Lao Jiang by the way."

Tita took Lao's hand and Burn's hand in the other. "I wanna see them fight first!" she exclaimed. She pulled them both toward Alejandro's Academy for Boys, where in an open field, they saw Mr. Night. He was watching Chase and his opponent, then wrote somethings on his clipboard.

"Watch it!" he shouted. Tita, Burn and Lao stopped where they were, the ground exploding a few inches in front of them. Mr. Night ran over to them. "Are you all right?"

"Yes, sorry, Sir." said Burn. Tita squeezed the girl's hand, then tugged on her arm. "Can we watch?"

The teacher shrugged. "Sure. Why not." He looked at his watch. "Chase just started with his partner. So this may go on for another 4 minutes." A branch flew at them. Mr. Night put out his hand, energy pulsating out in a shield that burned it to ash. "All those hormones really got them riled up."

Before Burn could ask, she heard the opponent laugh, "Take off my earrings?! Why?!" The boy laughed. When Chase tried to strike him, he turned and flipped off the ground like a cat falling in reverse. Chase took a few breaths then regained his cool. Before Chase could move, his opponent came up behind him and whispered something to him. "You gave them to me... remember??"

"Jullian! Chase! stop fooling around!" shouted Night. "Tic-Toc." He scratched the back of his head. "What's up with those two?"

The day after MeMe died... a few hours ago...

'Yo,' said Chase. Jazmyn turned to face him. She had just finished talking with Dean Dreamer and was headed back to her dorm, when she had (somehow) bumped into Chase. He held out his fist to her, and she held out hers, palm up. 'These are for you.' Chase put a pair of green jade earrings in her hand. She looked blankly at them, then gave him a soft smile.

, very

'Why?' she asked. Today was just not her day, Jazmyn couldn't concentrate and the depression was starting to sink in. But this randomly performed act... It made her feel funny. Not haha funny, but being not used to what's happening.

'The color brings out your eyes.' Chase felt her cheek, then ran his fingers through her hair shortened. 'They'd look nice on those pointy ears of yours, Lun.' He turned and left Jazmyn to her work. She looked at the jewelry in her hands then held them out to the light. She pulled her small golden studs out and replaced them with the jades. She looked at her reflection in the window. They were pretty, and the pale color really contrasted against her tan complexion.

'Hey! Chase-kun!' She shouted down the hall. Chase turned halfway to look over his shoulder at Jazmyn. 'Arigatou gozaimasu!'

Present hour...

"No!" Jullian laughed. When Chase struck him, Jullian was sent back a few feet. "You're just angry I look pretty in them!" He flipped his shoulder length hair to the side to reveal his ears. Jullian wore a pair of tear-shaped jade earrings. 'You can take over at anytime little girl.'

'I don't feel like it...' she responded. Tita watched with wide eyes as the two boys fought. She looked at them with such movements, it reminded her of dancing cranes. '...Just don't hurt him... Julie...'

Chase grabbed the Jullian's shirt, then threw him into a tree. He turned and smashed through the branches roughly. Chase kicked Jullian as hard as he could. Jullian was sent down, but as he began to fall, he grabbed Chase's leg. They both fell, and before hit the ground Jullian let go. "Besides. She gave them to me." 'When are you going to get over it?'

'Julie... leave me alone... this really isn't the time.' Jazmyn groaned. 'You aren't doing like I asked.'

'You're being weak again!' He snarled. 'The reason MeMe died, wasn't because she loved you and wanted to protect you. She believed in you and your power.' Jullian blocked another one of Chase's punches, his fist hitting his forearms, nearly breaking them. 'She died because she thought it was worth the trouble! If you can't do what I ask, why should I listen to you, if you really aren't worth the trouble?!

"Roxas!" A black handled sword appeared in his hands. "Now, let's finish this!"

Burn turned to Mr. Night. "Are they supposed to be armed?!!"

Mr. Night looked at the stop watch. There were only a few seconds left, so no need to end it early. He looked at them, exchanging blows and sending out waves of energy.

'Jazmyn! I'm going to kill him to free you from this damned seal!' Jullian smiled.

"Lumius~da~LaMueres~!" Roex's blade glowed bright red, Jullian's energy pouring into the weapon. 'Release!' Chase punched the ground sending up large amounts of rock and debris. Dust flew into Jullian's eyes, it burned and he let out a furious cry. "Where are you, you bastard?!!" Through the earthy smells of rock, clay and dirt, Jullian found the boy's scent. In the moments, he froze time. Everything stopped except Chase and Jullian.

He cleared the cloud of dust with a swing of Roex. Chase was looking at the sharp tip at it. "I'm going to make this clear to a little punk like you. The girl you gave these earrings to, really appreciates it. But she would also like for you to stop acting like such a pervert around her. Because she's a halfbreed nosfuratu, do you think you actually have a chance with her?!" Jullian turned his head, the jade earrings showing in the light.

Chase let out a low growl. "Why the frack do you care?"

"Why do I care?! That kiss you stole from her is legally binding like a wedding band. And the only way to unbind you two." Jullian's grip on Roex tightened. "Is to kill you."

"RYUTEN!" A sword formed in Chase's hands. A japanese katana with faded black flames in the blade, and black and gold leather on the handle. "I'd like to see you try."

"Lyra." A white handled sword formed in Jullian's left hand. "Bring it, Lizard boy!"

\* \* \*

Dreamer looked out her window to see a commotion across the lake. Sparks and earthen debris flew every where, and she wondered if her brother was even watching his students. She doubted it. Even if Maniac was more level headed then her at situations like 'The science lab blew up!' or 'Oh my God! A student's on fire!' he'd watch from the sidelines to see how the kids would react. Dreamer sighed, looks like she would have to break up this little dispute between the Fallen and the Dragon.

She stood up and began to walk out her office, when suddenly she felt a Demonic aura. 'How did they

get inside the school?!" She pulled off her black silk gloves and cracked her knuckles loudly. Her dark green nails glowed, then tattoos on the back of her hands appeared. "Come on out you sons-of-a-dog!"

Shadows started leaping out at her, one of the creatures striking her. Her black blouse was torn, the monster's claws raked across her chest. Touching her blood, Dreamer then touched the wall then pulled her fingers across it, leaving crimson streaks. Dreamer's nails glowed then she tugged on the blood, it became ribbons that then turned into a spider web like structure. A large animal was tangled in the web. It had sickly grey and yellow scales and bones poked through its skin. Ribs, spines and part of the creature's jaw were visible and it had a scorpion like tail. Small bone like wings and at least seven eyes, all of them silver. Another one flew at her, and she repeated her webmaking attack.

"Release!" she cried out, the ribbons turned into incantations then the monsters were nothing. Fury overtook her, and she stomped back on her way. She went into the registration office and used the P.A. to announce a meeting in the auditorium. "All students report to the auditorium. If you aren't there in twenty minutes, detentions will be served." Dreamer clicked her fingers; with that she was healed and her blouse was fixed. Hopefully, it wasn't what she thought it was. "Those eyes..."

\*\*\*

Their swords clashed, sparks flying everywhere. Chase blocked with RyuTen as Jullian tried to strike. Their swords locked and they were face to face.

'Julie! Stop it!' his voice screamed.

'Wake up, little girl! All this shoot that's happening is because of you!' Jullian replied. 'Now if you can't fix any of it, I will!' Chase's sword shattered. Jullian held both swords to his throat, like a giant pair of scissors. "Tell me now, Lizard Punk, why you like her?" Chase's orange eyes glowed with fury. "Because... for all you know, I couldn't taken something else from her..." He licked his lips. "Something precious to every young woman. Aside from her first kiss."

"SON OF A dog!!!!" Chase came at him. As Jullian dodged, a small cut formed on his cheek. "I can't answer your questions because they're so damn trivial to me, I don't give a shoot!" Chase's nails turned into talons, which raked across Jullian's chest. "You should know better than to touch another man's treasure!"

Jullian touched the torn fabric, then looked up at Chase. A slick smile on his lips, he disappeared. Chase looked around, then he reappeared in front of him. Jullian pecked Chase on the lips, then jumped back. Jullian flipped back out of Chase's grasp. "That's really all I wanted to hear." He opened his hands then the swords disappeared. Time began moving again.

"Time's up!" shouted Mr. Night.

"Sir!" Jullian turned to him. "I forfeit!" Before anyone could say anything, Tita ran over to him. She looked at him quizzically, but he just shrugged. "Time to go home."

"All right Manoy." Tita smiled. "Bye Miss Burn! Bye Mister Lao! Thank you for saving my life!" Jullian picked her up. He bent his legs, then jumped into the forest.

\*\*\*

The girls entered the auditorium, then silently sat down. Dean Dreamer was on stage, with all the teachers sitting in chairs in the background. "There have been incidents with Ghost, Hollows and even lower class pure blood Demons on our campus." Her dark green eyes glowed, with what looked like fury. "And these creatures can't be contacted, unless summoned. So what I am going to do, is put all Summoners, and Alchemists on lock down. And all books on the subjects suspended until the culprit is found." A wave of groans and moans came from the crowded room. Some girls behind the Shadow's began whispering.

"WTF? We all know who did this shoot in the first place, so why should we suffer?" said Danica. Chii glanced at the girl, then was met with a stonecold glare. "What are you lookin' at halfbreed?!"

"That is all. You may return to your classes." Dreamer said, turning away and walking off stage.

\*\*\*

Jazmyn was waiting outside the auditorium for them. She waved to them then walked over. Danica and a group of other Verve Sectors (opposite students of the Shadow Division. Because Light Division sounds so retarded. o\_X) walked past her. Danica and Jazmyn bumped shoulders, and Jazmyn apologized.

"Oh great!" Danica snapped. "The culprit finally shows up." Danica grabbed her arm. "Why the hell do you summon something you can't control?! Is that what happened to MeMe?!" Jazmyn tried to wrench her arm free, and averted her eyes from Danica. "Her love for you has sent her to hell, where you should--!!!"

Jazmyn's hand wrapped around Danica wrist and pulled the girl close. "Don't you dare speak ill of my, Sun-chan." she hissed. "And say things you know nothing about!"

Danica's blue eyes looked at Jazmyn's amber hues. "What are ya gonna do?! Haaaaaaalfbreed."

Jazmyn had had enough of this dog. She turned her arm quickly, her uniform tearing off the sleeve. When Jazmyn was freed, she hit Danica in the chest, open palmed. A surge of power pushed Danica back, crashing into a wall. The front of her jacket and blouse torn, showing off a silver cross on a chain. This infuriated Jazmyn. She was slipping. Slipping. Slipping. Slipping...!

"You think that thing you wear around your neck makes you different?" Jazmyn asked loudly, all the girls in the halls looking at her. "Here's a little secret the Heavenly, All Mighty, Celestial ones don't want you to know! They hate us! Every. Single. One. Of. Us. And when I say us, I mean you Verve Sectors as well as us Shadow Division! Especially spell casters, Animuses and Anthros. Anything that is remotely magical, yet human, they hate!" Danica came at Jazmyn, the vampire dodged easily. "ESPECIALLY. LITTLE WITCHES WHOM THEY TRIED TO BURN OFF THE FACE OF THE EARTH IN THE SEVENTEETH CENTURY."

"LUMICUS PYRIUUS!" White flames jumped out of Danica's hands, burning the tips of Jazmyn's hair.

Envi came up behind Jazmyn. Her arms went under Jazmyn's and her hands met behind the vampire's head. "As much as I'd Luuuuuuuuv to see how this ends up, Jazzi-kun, you need to calm down before you get expelled." Jazmyn tried to twist and slip out of the young Cyborg's grasp, but failed when Envi's grasp tighten, nearly breaking her arms. "I. Said. Calm. Down." She glared at Danica. "You! Need to frack off, because whatever the hell your prob is, you need to shut up."

Kaj, Chii, and Elen stood next to them. Jazmyn growled all the while, grinding her teeth, and snarling like a dog. "Next time, Danni, I'll win."

Danica flipped her dark brown hair back, away from her eyes. She dusted herself off then turned away from them. "Yeah. Keep Dreaming, halfbreed."

The crowd of girls cleared, and only a Jazmyn, Kaj, Chii, Elen and Envi remained. Envi let Jazmyn go, her shoulder slumped slightly. "Verve dog." She looked at Envi. "You got a new arm."

"Yep. Courtesy of B.B. Systems and Software. I'm still trying to break it in. Feels a little numb." Envi stretched her hands above her head. "I guess you heard about the announcement."

"Not like it applies to me." Jazmyn said. "Awww! Damn it!" She inspected the tattered sleeve of her jacket. "This was my only one...!"

"What are you talking about? Of course it applies to you. Your cards--" started Envi.

"Nenny burned them." Jazmyn grabbed Envi's and Elen's arms. "Come on, we'll be late."

\*\*\*

Kaj had snuck out of the dorm after curfew. She looked around in the darkness to see if anyone had followed her. She put out her hands in front of her and called out a spell. "Daran." Her black demi-wings quadrupled in size, but never connected. They were barely touching her back, only attached my the spell that bound her body together. A tattoo on her back of chains glowed, painfully extracting magic from her veins. She stepped on the top of the lake, and began walking across it like it was land. She baited them to come out, daring them to attack.

The Chime-demos were blood thirsty, and only wanted something to eat, so of course they attacked. Kaj smiled. "Now!" Chii removed her chamoflaged cloak and threw a paper charm. The demon froze where it stood, then was entrapped inside the piece of paper. Another one lept out of the darkness at Kaj. Els appeared under the water, forming a globe of ice around the demon.

Before any of them could inspect the two, a third one jumped out. The demon ran across the water. It crashed through the ice shield Els had formed, and dove directly for Kaj. It's talons sunk into her shoulder as it's stinger on the end of its tail impaled her through her stomach.

"Kaj-nee-chan!" Chii threw ten paper bombs, a small explosion making Kaj fall to her knees and the demon being destroyed. Toxins began travelling through her body, burning everything from her lungs to her muscles. Her heart beat faster, and everything hurt. She fell forward, nearly sinking into the water,



but Els made an ice boat for them to sit in.

"Kaj...Staaaaaay... A-way-kuh. Staaaaaaaay....A-way...." Chii said, but it was distorted, and Kaj's different colored eyes turned purple. "A-way-kuh."

England~~1624 A.D.

"Howlett!" he shouted. "Do it now! He'll have our heads for this!"

"She's weak, and hungry and barely a threat!" said Howlett. "I am not going to kill her!" She straightened out her blue uniform. "I see no case here. Let us leave Donovan." Howlett began to walk away, she looked at the girl. Wearing a worn down man's jacket and boots too big for her feet, over her tattered and faded dress. A small smile was on her face, thanking Howlett. "Donavan! Now!"

Donavan glared at her, then the girl cowering in the corner. "She in the spawn of Satan himself! That should be enough of a case!" He drew a savor. "We, soldiers of God, must protect all that is pure! And Purge all that is not."

"DONAVAN!!" Howlett turned and drew her own sword. She stabbed him through his side, possibly piercing his appendix. "Where is it our place to judge what deserves to be purged?! She had done no sin but exist Donovan! We are no warriors of God if all we do is slaughter the innocent for what they are!" The girl looked at Howlett, fear over taking her. She grabbed her hand, then pulled her into an abandoned building. "What are you d--?!"

"No hablas! Tu no hablas!" the girl whispered. She pulled Howlett up a flight of stairs and into a dusty attic. She kicked down a wall constructed of moldy boards, then pushed her through. Moments later, Howlett heard Soldiers of the Holy Order shouting and asking who had killed Brother Donovan. "Gracias, Mi viver es su!" She bowed. The girl spoke spanish, but she also had an odd accent to it. "Corres!"

Howlett nodded then began running on the rooftops and inside other abandoned buildings. A couple miles later, while running, her foot sunk into the dead roofing and Howlett fell down three floors onto stone. While, still breathing but in great pain, she was tied to the stake and was to be burned. As a heretic against the Catholic Church, and for being a Vampire herself. The second accused title was false, but no one dare speak against the Order, for fear of death as well.

In the crowd of onlookers, Howlett saw the girl again. She wore a cloak so to shield herself from the Order, and a man held her arm as she watched. The girl tugged on his arm, whispering things. Panic stickened she tugged on his arm, then pointed to Howlett. "I am...Sorry... Howlett!" she shouted, trying to get the words right.

\*\*\*

Kaj's eyes opened, her vision burning against the light. "shoot..." She moaned. She felt something on her neck, it was a sharp pain, and warm. Her vision cleared to see it was Jazmyn. "WTF?!!"

"Stop moving..." said Elen. "She's almost done."

Jazmyn had drawn the poison out, forcefully, through the young fire demon's veins. Daisy would have done it, but was inexperienced in binding venoms and extracting them. She was great with potions and such, but ever drawing out poisons like this. Jazmyn's eyes opened and she lifted her head from Kaj's neck. She spit the blood out into a bucket, then wiped her mouth on the back of her hands.

"Goddamnit Delia!" said Ryota, the nurse. "If you didn't have friends like Miss Els, and Miss Chii you'd be dead withen moments!" The Inu woman scratched a spot behind her fuzzy ears. "Lucky. Lucky. Lucky."

Kaj sat up, then looked around. Infirmary again! Damn! This really wasn't her week! Jazmyn sat in a chair next to the cot, her hair down and she was still in a night dress, as were Envi, Elen and Burn.

"We caught two of them." said Kaj. "Chii had one in a charm and Els caught on in an globe!"

"Yeeeeeah..." moaned Chii. "The charm caught on fire after that one that attacked you... spit acid on it. And the one in the globe... killed itself."

"So we're back where we started." said Els. She punched the wall angrily, leaving a dent in the drywall. "Not knowing where the hell those things came from."

"Well, I'll keep Delia here for observations tonight.. and by lunch tomorrow she'll be back in class." said Ryota. "Back to your dorms."

Everyone obeyed, but Jazmyn. She looked at Kaj, her golden eyes blank of all emotions. When Ryota turned off the light, Jazmyn asked a question that nearly killed her. "Who was Donovan?"

"Just somebody from a long time ago." said Kaj. "Were you inside my head when I was out?"

"Sorry. It came with the toxin removal." Jazmyn whispered. But Kaj was already asleep.

# 10 - Butterfly Blue

## chapter seven: Butterfly Blue

"Mother! Let's go down to the beach today!" said the daughter.

The woman looked at her. "Alright. Go get your brother." The five year old smiled then ran to find her brother. "MAAAAANOY! MAAAAANOY!!!"

"What?" He shouted, his feet almost knee deep in the garden-terrace. "Can't you see I'm busy?!"

"Mother said to come home! We are going to the shore today!" She shouted. Her brother looked at their grandmother, who was also working in the rice terrace. She nodded then waved him away. "Yay!"

The two children ran home to meet their mother packing a bamboo and straw basket with sticky brown rice cakes and a mango. She held the basket and strapped on large straw hats onto their heads. With the basket in one hand they walked down their mountain path, past fields of rice and papaya trees to the coast. Large amounts of dried salt were on the shore, that were being harvested by farmers to share with their neighbors in trade. The girl took off her hat then handed it to her mother. She ran into the water, clothes and all. She splashed and laughed. Then her older brother came in, laughing and splashing her too. After about two hours of this, they came back and had lunch with their mother on the sand.

"Mother! Look!" said the girl. "The clouds are trying to speak to us!" She laughed, walking to the shore. Her brother looked too, then turned to their mother, a worried look in his eyes. "What is it Manoy?"

"Mother... Those ships don't look like they're from the Merchants." he said.

Their mother stood up. "We had best head back home. There is much work to be done."

\*\*\*

"Yo." said Chii. "We got class Jazzi-chan."

"hmmrrrn?" Jazmyn blinked then lifted up her head. "What a wierd dream..." She sat up and stretched. Chii handed her her uniform, then turned to Kaj.

"How are you?" Chii asked. "Feeling ready for class?"

Kaj yawned. "Eh... Sure...why not..." Chii handed Kaj's uniform to her.

"It's almost eight. Classes start in thirty." said Chii. "And our schedules were changed. We have first hour with Mr. Night today."

\*\*\*

"Three weeks ago, you all pretty much passed your combat quiz with flying colors. In one week, finals will begin. The tests will last at least a week and a half. You'll be retested and that, along with your written papers, will total your grades." said Mr. Night. "But this test will be a lot harder. You'll be given ten minutes and you'll all be fighting me."

There were laughs and giggles among the class, saying how easy this would be. He laughed with them. "Well this one, won't be a piece of cake." he said sternly. "There's a reason I'm teacher of Defense and Combat, children. In one week."

\*\*\*

Daisy tensed her body, then struck out at Elen. She dodged then blocked. Elen evaded, pulling her body out of Daisy's reach then kicking her in the side. Daisy went tumbling, then regained her stance. The fire demon sent out a wave of heat, and the vampire blocked. Daisy made a shield of psychic energy form around her, making the fire split and die. The flames were shot back at Elen, but she just absorbed it back, and what she couldn't Elen dodged.

"Eek!" screamed someone. They looked to see a five year old in, literally, the line of fire. Daisy jumped and grabbed the girl. Her purple and black hair falling onto her face, she asked if the girl was alright. "Yes... Have you seen Invidia Rodunn?"

"Breanna!" shouted a voice. Elen and Daisy turned to see three other girls standing a few feet away. The one that had shouted had silver hair, and metallic eyes. She wore a gray dress with a black stripe around the waist. She had black ankle socks and maryjane shoes. They were all dressed the same, except for the colors of their dresses. "You eediot! Why are you fraternizing with such low lives?!!"

She was obviously the oldest and leader. So the one named Breanna stood up and dusted off her navy blue dress. She checked her light blue pigtails, then skipped over to them. "Just seeing if they know her."

"Are you four lost?" asked Daisy. She smiled sweetly at them. "Why don't you come with us, and we'll see if we can find your parents."

"Yeah, let's get back to school." said Elen.

The one dressed in black scoffed. "Pfft! We can take care of ourselves thank you very much." she snapped. "We don't need a bunch of no talented demons helping us."

"Uehrhg?!" Elen ground her teeth as she forced a smile. "I don't think you know what you are saying..."

"Where's Invidia!" shouted Breanna. "I want to see her! NOW!!!"

Elen and Daisy looked at each other. These girls weren't from the school, and had really bad attitudes. Daisy sensed a powerful aura from them, so it might be best to lie. "We don't know an 'Invidia'." said Daisy. "Come on Elen. We're meeting the others for lunch."

They turned, and began to leave. The one dressed in silver growled. "Don't turn your backs on us!" Daisy and Elen glanced over their shoulders at them. "Well, we talentless demons would help, but we're just so talentless!" Elen shrugged. "Call the front office."

"Grr!" The silver one came at Daisy. "dog!" They jumped out of the way. Large chunks of rocks flew everywhere when she punched the ground. "Tell us where Invidia is! NOW!"

"We don't know any Invidia!" said Elen. The one in black ran for her. Elen tried to dodge, but the girl was just as fast. She kned Elen, sending her into a tree.

"You two are lying!" said the one in black. "And until you tell us where she is..."

The one in white smiled. Her ivory eyes and grin creeping them out. "We're going to beat the hell out of you."

\*\*\*

"Excuse me.." Jazmyn said, looking at the boy held the spear. "Are you friends with Chase?"

The boy looked at her crossly. "pfft! Friends?! With that weak @\$ \$ punk?!" He laughed.

She felt wierd, asking around this question to random boys. "Are you stronger then he is?" she asked quickly.

"What's it to you?" he asked, tensing a bit.

Jazmyn fell, sitting on her ankles, kneeling before him. "Train me. Just for the next week." She said sternly. "If you really are stronger then Chase, then I need you to train me! Please Jiang-sama!"

Lao looked at the girl, then gave her a smile. "You're the second girl to ask me that. Sure. Whatever. Tomorrow afternoon. Three-thirty sharp."

\*\*\*

Kaj and Chii were walking when parts of a tree crashed infront of them. They looked to see Daisy and Elen fighting a little girl in white, a girl in black, and... Another Elen?!

"WTF is going on here?! Elen?!" asked Chii. Both redheads turned to her. "Ummm..."

"Get them!" said one Elen. "Those girls are demons and one of them can change shape! She's the doppleganger!"

"No! She is!" said the other.

Kaj and Daisy turned to Chii. The ninja shrugged, looked at the little girls, then shrugged again. "Byakugan!" She gasped at what she saw. "Damn... They're both exacty a like."

"So how do we know which Elen is our Elen?" asked Kaj.

"What's going on?" asked Burn, who had been running but stop at the sight of them. "...Elen?" She pointed at one. "And Elen?"

"She's the clone!" shouted one Elen.

"No! She is! Attack!" said the other. She struck out at the other, but she dodged. Fire started jumping off their hands. "Attack her!"

"EIIIIllay!!" said Kaj, with a wierd accent. "Catch!" She threw a bal lof fire at them. An Elen caught it, then the flames turned green and died. "Yeah. She's the fake."

"Damnit!" she hissed. Her green eyes turned silver and she grew younger. Her red hair turned straight, grew longer and silver, and her school uniform changed into a grey dress with a white stripe around the waist. "Well, looks like we've been found out. BARACIA! BELLE! FORMATION ALPHA!!" A girl in black and a girl in white appeared next to her. They smiled with wicked smiles, then came at the students.

Baracia came at Kaj, the punch shattering the earth. The force the little girl sent out, caused Kaj to fly back into a pile of dirt. Her black hair swishing in the wind, the black plad child came at the fire demon again. "Tell us where she is!!"

"Tell us where Invidia is!" screamed Beth, the one dressed in silver. "Nullify--"

She was knocked back when Envi struck her. "Who the hell are you four?!" Beth, Baracia and Belle looked up at her, then Breanna who stood next to Envi. "I asked you a question! Who the hell are you?!"

"001.2!" shouted Beth. "It's really you!"

The three ran to her. Envi tensed, readying herself for a fight. But to her suprise, then all lined up shoulder to shoulder and saluted her. "We are numbers 001.3, 001.4, 001.5, and 001.6." they resighted. "And you are our sister. Our leader, and commander. An original, and an oldest. 001.2 a.k.a. Invidia."

\*\*\*

It took awhile for all this information to soak in. There were other cyborgs like her? Envi was a little relieved, but she wanted to learn more. Which caused a problem, because after their short battle with the students, Belle, Baracia and Beth were exhausted. They were up against the wall in the dorm, sleeping and recharging. Breanna had explained that it had taken them quite a few weeks to find Envi, and those couple of weeks they used as little power as possible. And then with their power almost at nothing, they attacked Elen and Daisy without much thought other then to find Envi.

"May I ask why?" Envi said, sipping apple juice from a juice box.

Breanna looked at her. "You don't remember?!! Mother sent you out years ago! And it wasn't until resently that your signal went dead. Sister Beth and Sister Baracia were getting restless and they decided they wanted to find you and here we are." Breanna smiled, her hands went from wringing out

the ends of her skirt to her neck. Her eyes widened, and a panicked look came to her. "My locket! My locket!"

Kaj reached in her pocket. She pulled out a golden necklace with a large gold heart locket. "This it?" Breanna smiled, and gave a sigh of relief. "Aren't you sleepy? You were awake for as long as they were." She thumbed towards the three against the wall. "Shouldn't you be knocked out too?"

"I don't get all riled up like they do. I still have a few hours of power left." Breanna put her locket on and smiled softly at it. "Eldest sister! Do you really not remember?"

"Today's been too long." said Kaj. "I'm going to sleep." It was well after nine at night, and all they had done that day was fight, tests, more fighting and some writing in class. "Night. Envi, and Little Bre-Bre."

"Good night Miss Kaj." said Breanna sweetly. She turned back to Envi, who was also looking a little tired. "We might cause a scene with all the destruction. So when they're all rejuvenated, and such, we'll get back to Mother." Something beeped loudly. Breanna held out her arm, and the gem on her bracelet lit up. A hologram appeared and a series of other holographic images appeared and floated above the first. "Seems Mother wants us back ASAP..." Breanna reached in her pocket. She pulled out small iPod like device that was round and shaped like a white bunny. The buttons were its eyes and nose were pink and red. "She also says to give this to you. And that when the time is right, you'll know how to use it."

\*\*\*

What Breanna hadn't told Envi, was what really sent her sensors off was the supernatural power that was disrupting left and right, even more than the usual. She sighed heavily, hoping that this would end all right. How she did hate violence. She opened her mental channel with her sisters, and shut down her body so it could charge. Her psyche form looked the same as her conscious form, sky blue hair and navy eyes. Their mental room was a big blank white room, with nothing furnishing it but a fold away table and fold away chairs.

Baracia saw the sad look on Breanna's face and asked, "Why, Baracia? Why was I the one who had to lie?"

"You're the most innocent." sneered Beth. "Such a damn wimp you refuse to fight! Ha!"

"Well what's the point!" Breanna shot back. "People just end up hurt or dead, and nothing comes out of it but pain! Besides! Mother said I didn't haaaaave to fight, Beth!"

"Blah! Blah! Blah! Just shut up already!" Beth snarled. She folded her arm and turned away from them.

Belle waved her hand and a tea set appeared. She poured Breanna then herself a cup of tea. "Did you give her the Bunny-trac?"

"Yep. Just like we planned. Do you think she'll figure it out?" asked Breanna, sipping lightly.

"Well there's nothing more to discuss then." said Belle, glaring at Beth before she said another snide remark. "Sister Invidia is smart. She'll figure what to do with the Bunny-trac."

"Before Brother finds out-- Impossible!" laughed Baracia. "This was all stupid! We should of never come back here!"

"I agree. This is all stupid!" said Beth. "That stupid Lolita. Sending us back here with nothing but a few days of power and only a Bunny! Breanna! A bunny-trac!"

Another form appeared. She looked in her late teens, early twenties. Her skin was light tan, and she had aqua colored eyes. Her hair was dark forest green with streaks of silver and lime, and two antenai like bangs that were light brown. "Hello, daughters. Was the trac delivered?"

They all stood up and saluted. "Yes Mother."

"All right. I'll send Claer to get you ASAP." The woman signed off, leaving the sisters to their tea. "And please, try not to doddle, Daughters. You have limited time as it was."

"Yes Mother." They responded. "Right away."

\*\*\*

saturday! yay! 6:12 a.m.

Envi woke up to see a pair of azul eyes looking back at her. "ewaah?!!" She jumped back and fell out of bed. She was on the floor, her legs on the bed and her back on the floor. "Breanna... What were you doing?"

"Watching you sleep, Sister Invidia." she smiled. "Baracia and Beth want to play with you today."

"What game?" asked Envi, standing up and fixing her nightshirt.

"Referee." said Breanna holding up the a sweat suit to the girl.

"How do I play?"

"You don't," Breanna grabbed her arm and pulled her out to of bed.

\*\*\*

"HRAAAAAAH!!!" Baracia punched Beth, sending the silver plad girl into a tree. The two robot girls went at it again, leaving debris in their wake. Belle saw them, and waved them over.

"Morning Sisters. You slept well I trust?" asked Belle. Envi nodded then thumbed towards Beth and Baracia. "I've kept score so far, but now you need to. I'm tired of just standing on the side lines. You and Breanna are gonna keep score now."

Envi looked at the little Breanna who puled herself up on a rock to watch them. "Why don't you join them?" asked Envi.

"I don't like violence. There are other ways to solve our problems." Breanna said, yawning. "Besides. I only fight when i really, really have to." She turned and to face Envi, her blue eyes looking at her with



kindness and warmth. Like Envi's eyes, they were a shade of dark indigo with a ring of sky blue around the pupil. All the other girls had this odd look too, but it differed from girl to girl. With Baracia's black eyes, she had a barely visible white stripe, that was too thin for anyone to really notice. Belle's white eyes had a silver stripe, and Beth's silver eyes had white stripe, with tiny notches of black where her iris's adjusted. Envi wasn't looking at the girls right now, she just remembered the way they looked from last night.

"Are you watching?!" screamed Beth. "You had better be watching!!! This time I'll win for sure!!!"

"Hey right pasty-@\$\$!" laughed Baracia. "Un, deux, tres!!!"

\*\*\*

Beth came at Baracia, her speed unrivaled. Her fist came up to the other girl's face, but the silver haired girl dodged. She went back, her weight shifting to her hands and both her knees crashed into Baracia's chin. Beth backflipped away from Baracia and laughed. Baracia growled then came at her sister. Beth stood up straight, one foot out in front and the other side ways behind her. Beth's right hand opened and something came out, then her left hand did the same. A forked blade, with on the outside covered in jagged edges. Baracia's wicked smile came back. "I won't lose this time Hairclip."

"Ptcha!" Baracia scoffed. "A pasty-@\$\$ girl like you can't win against me!" Baracia's hand went into fists. The center of the back of her hands opened. A black gem was visible, and her digits seperated a few inches to show her mechanics. Her fingers, then opened and blades came out. But these blades, unlike Beth's that were forked and came from her wrists, were slender and long like needles, and had small hooks on the tips of each one. "Come and git some! Pasty-@\$\$!"

Baracia smiled. When they made contact, the blades 'clanged' and sent sparks out. Breanna yawned. She was bored with this show of brute force and chaos. A black butterfly with blue, white and red pattern fluttered by her ear. She held out her hand, letting the small critter landing on her fingers. It flapped then was off towards the forest, away from all the commotion. "I'm bored. Can I go exploring?" asked Breanna.

Envi glanced at her from the corner of her eye. "You won't get lost will you?" Breanna shook her head. "All right. you know how to find us... follow the destroyed landscape." Breanna laughed, then waved goodbye. Her maryjane shoes pounded on the dirt as she followed the blue butterfly.

\*\*\*

Following the butterflies, Breanna found a pasture that was full of nothing but butterflies. She spun around when they took off. They fluttered, the wind slowly moving under them. She smiled, a genuine smile. Breanna hadn't really relaxed this much since--

"Hello Littler Sister." he said.

Breanna turned to look. Her sky colored eyes narrowed. Her arms and legs tensed. "You destroyed 001.1! I saw it with my own eyes!"

"Please Sister, call me Ignacio." He smiled. The man stepped into the light to reveal himself. He had bronze colored skin and lime green colored hair. His bangs stuck out, spiky and black. "Or better yet the name Mother gave to me. Envy."

\*\*\*

England 1644 A.D.

'It's so cold...' she whispered. '...so cold...' A light far off in the distance flickered. '...What... is that?' Her fingers went out to touch it, then the light became large and she was pulled through. Her body hurt with pain she had never felt before. Jolts of forced life traveled through her. Hands appeared, made of the darkness, then they pulled her closer to a doorway. More pain, forced life was pushed into her. '...I don't want it... No! Stop it! Let go!'

The doorway opened in the floor and she came through. She coughed and screamed and tried to stand but fell. Her eyes looked around at the light, finding it utterly painful. She saw a figure she remembered, then screamed at him. "WTF are you doing?! Why?!! WHY?!!"

He touched her face, brushing her crimson and autumn hair away from her eyes. "My daughter...! My daughter...! you're alive!"

"Bastard! Do you know what you hae done?!!" she shouted. She shouted when an overwhelmingly stabbing pain filled her. He held out his hands, and in the palm were a few amber colored stones. She took them, wolfing them down like they were nothing. Soon her strength returned and she was able to stand. Realizing she was naked, he held out a dress to her, She screamed at the sight of herself. "What have you done to me?!!"

\*\*\*

"GYAAH!" Breanna flew back, her arm tearing clear off. "OH GOD!!" Pain jolted through her body, screaming at her. She held her empty socket and touched the back of her shoulder. Seconds later her mind turned off her pain receptors. Envy punched her again, sending the eight year old into the ground. Breanna pushed off the ground and dodged his attack. She gasped when she felt it gnawing on her. "Why are you doing this 001.1?!!"

"Heh." An evil smile came on his face. Breanna readied her body, then tried to jump away. To her horror she couldn't move. "Looks like you need some upgrading little sis." Envy shrugged, "It's just a simple Nano-mist web. But then again. You where the last model she built before the accident. She probably forgot to program that into you and models 3 through 6." Envy walked up to her, looking into her bright blue eyes. They had so many years behind them, like a real child's. Besides the youth behind them, he saw the terror deep inside them. "You know what I'm gonna do next? Li'l sis?" He struck her, knocking her into a boulder. Her skin tore, showing off her mechanics. Breanna knelt there, her body refusing to move due to the nano-web. It tightened on her. Tears began coming out of her eyes. This infuriated Envy, acting like a weak human with these damned emotions. He raised his hand to strike her again, but a thought came to him.

He knelt to her height, then looked her in the eyes. "This'll be fun." Envy kissed Breanna on the lips, his tongue grazed over her mouth. Her eyes turned pink, then Envy withdrew. He released the web, and

Breanna stood up. He picked up her arm and put it to her socket. The cords reattached themselves and the latex skin fixed it self. The nanoshield sped along the healing process, and her torn clothes too. She turned and ran back the way she came. Envy smiled. "Oh this'll be fun."

# 11 - Runny Babbit

## chapter eight: Runny Babbit

"It's a three way tie. Belle has six, Baracia has six, and Beth has six. Now can we go inside I'm ready to--" Envi was cut off when something crashed into the ground, causing her to be tossed a few feet away. "WTF was that?!"

"Breanna! What the hell!" shouted Beth. "You don't attack Invidia like that!!"

The blue haired girl turned, looking emotionlessly at them. In a blur, Breanna came at Beth. She jumped out of the way, but Breanna sideswiped her with her heal, sending the silver girl into the ground. She turned to Baracia. The dark skinned girl, blocked then brought her down with her clawed hand. The hooks getting Breanna just behind her ear.

"What is wrong with you?!!" asked Baracia. "You never fight!" Breanna's small hand when around Baracia's wrist, then crushed it. Distracted with the pain, Baracia didn't see Breanna tear the hooks out the side of her head. Holding both her hands, Breanna pulled them together. Using Baracia's weight and motion, Breanna catapulted herself over her. She came at Belle. The girl in white moved with grace, dodging blue's moves seconds apart.

"Breanna! Snap out of it!" Belle sucker punched the girl in the stomach, then sideswiped a kick. Breanna evaded the attack, then looked Belle dead in the eye. Belle was knocked back, but jumped in the way when Breanna tried to attack Envi. She kned Belle's chin upward, then struck her with a maylay of punches. The white clad girl was thrown back. None of the girls could move, Beth screamed out furiciously at Breanna.

"frack! Breanna!" Beth snarled. "Release the Goddamn nano-web! So I can kick your @\$#!!"

Breanna looked sideways at her sister, then turned back to Envi. Breanna readied her body in a stance. Her hands went together at her side. Loud cracking came from her hands, and electricity flashed. The palms of her hands and her fingers seperated their digits, showing of the metallic color of her insides. "LIGHTING BLAST!!!" She fired at her sisters, but missed by a few centimeters. Breanna's hands turned back to normal then she came back at Envi. Envi dodged her attacks, then grabbed Breanna's arms. She turned her backwards then pinned her arms to her back.

"Breanna stop it!" said Envi. "I don't want to hurt you!!" Envi saw the little girl's face. Tears came down, from her pink eyes. Wait?! Pink?!! Breanna pulled her arms together, then twisted her body away. Freed, Breanna ran off back into the forest. "Belle!" The girls stood up and walked over to her. "Her eyes... They weren't blue."

"Damn it." Belle replied. "I noticed." Belle took off her black head band then straighten out her hair. "She's infected with a virus called Hashish." Belle turned to Baracia and Beth. "It's a computer version of a drug that assassins used twenty years ago. It's turns off the person's emotions, and doubles their strength. If

we don't get it out of her soon, it'll be impossible later."

"Who would infect Breanna?" asked Envi. She ground her teeth, thinking about what scum would do that to her Little Breanna. "How does Hashish work?"

"It's like a remote control. Making her do things she doesn't want to do. Like attacking us, and almost frying us with her lighting blast." said Beth. "We were made with the vaccine system to it... but there was an accident and Breanna wasn't installed with the vaccine."

Baracia turned and looked where the blue girl had run off to. 'So he's back... Didn't think we'd have to speed up our mission to this stage already.'

\*\*\*

Burn flipped through the book on Telepathic Comunication, she stopped on a small chapter on Animals.

"Contact between human and beast has long since been forgotten. Humans with the power, soon after discovery, find that they have over abilities too. Agility and speed like that of a feline, and cunning and the strategic mind of a fox..." Burn skimmed through it, finding it shorter then she thought, the ending sentence sending her a back a bit. "...Contact, as the power is called in the magical society, is no longer proficient among humans, but is frugal in forest nymphes or woodland demons."

Her head fell on the book. In other words, she was no closer to finding out where she came from, then a buffalo learning to fly. "Damnit all!" she mumbled. The librarian looked at her, but went back to catalogging. 'Get it together Burn... We'll start again tomorrow morning.' She sat up and looked at her watch, it read 2:49. She picked up her bag, placed the book back on the shelf. "Man. I'm gonna be late."

\*\*\*

"Miss Lynn, Miss Lun." He addressed both of them. Lao scratched the back of his head. He looked at Jazmyn, then his watch. "I'm going to work with Burn. Since you two aren't at the same level, I asked someone to help... But that dumbass is always late as f--"

"So bored." said a voice. A tall lean boy came walking up to them. He had a green eye, and spiky blue hair. He only had one eye because the other was covered by an eye patch. "So very bored." He wore no jacket, and his shirt was untucked, and a pair of black and red gym shoes. In one hand he had a stereo, the other was behind his head. Lao shot him an angry glare, but the blue haired boy's desposition didn't change. "Yo." he waved to them. "Nice weather we're having, Yes?"

"This is Conner Wong." said Lao, flatly.

"Cynic! My name is Cynic!" He yawned loudly. "Which of you is Jazmyn?" Lao and Burn pointed to her. "Alright. Come on." They walked for a few miles, until the schools were blocked from view by trees and greenery. Jazmyn glanced back at them, finding she could only see Alejandro's clock tower, and even that was barely visibly.

'God we're really far away.' she thought to herself.

"Okay, we're here." said Cynic. He made a large over step, then walked normally. Jazmyn followed only to trip and fall. She looked at what she landed on. A large flat stone platform, that the overgrowth of grass and weeds covered the edges. "Watch your step."

"Kinna late." she mumbled, dusting off her sweat pants. She readied herself for a fight. "What are you doing?"

"Chick, calm down." He skimmed through the songs playing, then finally he found one. He quietly counted out the beats to himself. He pressed Rewind so the song was at the beginning. "All right, Chick. Now try to keep up."

The techno-hiphop blared loudly, the base going through them both. It was a fast song, that seemed to almost tear into her. Cynic's laid back attitude shifted and he came at her. He was faster than Jazmyn anticipated and in moments was down on one knee. Gasping for air, she looked at him, shock on her face. Cynic looked down at her from where he stood, a few inches away. Moving on the balls of his feet, he was ready for her counter attack. He shot her a look of disappointment then jumped back.

"Chick, coooooome-oooooon!" he whined. "If you can't even keep up with me for ten seconds, what makes you think you can even face up to Night?" Jazmyn brushed a few strands of her hair away from her face. Then she snickered. "What is it?"

"Techno-hiphop?" Jazmyn stood up. She tapped her feet to the beat. "Dude, you need to recognize a DDR player when you see one."

\*\*\*

Envi sat on her bed. Holding the bunny in her hands, wondering where the hell Breanna was. Belle sat at the desk, skimming through the books and journals. Baracia stood up from the floor and sat on the desk itself.

"Get off." said Belle, not looking up from the book. Baracia didn't say anything. She looked at the ceiling, the walls, and Envi. She swung her legs freely, then glared at Belle. Belle returned her gaze, then repeated, more incedious, "Get. Off."

"Make me." Baracia finally replied.

"Get the frack off!" she snapped.

"Ya gonna have to make me dog!" Baracia screamed back. The two girls bickered loudly, when they were cut off sharply by Envi.

"BOTH OF YOU! SHUT THE frack UP!!" He green eyes glaring at them, furious. "Your youngest sister is infected with Hashish and off somewhere causing carnage, and all you three can do is fight amongst yourselves when you should be trying to track Breanna!"

Belle and Baracia looked on each other, something like fear in their eyes. Baracia slid off the desk, then quietly sat next to Envi on the bed. She folded her hands on her lap, then became well behaved almost like magic. Belle closed the books then did the same. Beth was lying on the other bed, her silver eyes looking at the back of Envi's head.

"We can't track her." said Beth. Her eyes looked away from Envi, then up at the ceiling. "If Breanna's infected with Hashish, it disables all mindlinks, and commands issued by the Cyborg. Like a fracking puppet. The only way to disable the virus is to find the first source and destroy it. After that we cleanse her harddrive and reboot her system."

It was around five, and almost dinnertime. The door opened and Jazmyn walked in. Dressed in jeans and a black v-neck top. She looked at Baracia then Belle, then Envi. "What's up with all the munchkins?" she asked, toweling off her hair.

"My sisters." Envi said. "Belle, Baracia and Beth."

"Excuse me, Beth. But could you move to Envi's bed, Please?" asked Jazmyn, politely. "And get your shoes off my pillow?"

Beth looked at the vampire, uncaring. She crossed her ankles, her feet still on the pillow. "Don't see your name on it, old hag."

Jazmyn turned to Envi. Speechless, she pointed from Beth to Envi, then Beth again. "I don't think you heard me. Get. Your feet. Off. My bed."

"Oh. I heard ya. But I still don't see your name on it." Beth pushed off her maryjane shoes, and put her now socked feet on the pillow. "Hag."

"Envi, I'm not in the mood for this." Jazmyn said, a low whine in her throat. "I just got out of training, and my muscles still ache. I really want to take a nap before dinner." Envi motioned Beth over, and the girl obeyed. A low growl in her throat, Beth grabbed her shoes and stood barefoot on the bed. She jumped off then walked over to Envi's bed. She pushed between Belle and Envi and laid down on the bed. "Thankyou."

\*\*\*

"Please! Someone!" she cried out. It was so dark, and cold. She had attacked her sisters! He had made her attack them! And use her electrical attack. Inside she was crying, no, she was screaming her lungs out. Breanna sat there, in the inner sanctum of her mind, away from Envi and the virus. "Mother! Belle! Invidia!" No one answered. She sat there, in the back of her mind, where once it was bright and took on any form she and her sisters wanted. A tea room, a gym, a playground, or even their home back at NaNoTech industries. Using what little control over her mind she had, Breanna made the room look like Envi's dorm. She had very little memory strength, so the room was empty of all distinguishing things. Only the furniture was there, no books or plants or posters on the walls.

Everything was going straight to hell. Why was Envy, prototype 001.1, still here? The D-command was put on both him and prototype 0001.7. If Envy was still functioning, what about Zeon? She went back to thinking about the time when she was first born. From the best parts and programmed with the latest tech. Her original name was just 001.6, sixth in seven, and youngest. The last Doll style prototype built by Katrina Donnerschlag. Doll style, or Lolita droid, was their name because that was the way they were built. Little girls. The perfect assassins. Killers and no one would be the wiser. But something went wrong with 001.6. She didn't want to kill, or even hurt anyone. She cried whenever someone stepped on a bug, and was as docile and kind as a kitten.

Katrina loved her anyways and kept her as her lab assistant. Later on, she gave all seven Dolls names. Ignacio, Invidia, Beth, Baracia, Belle, Breanna and Zeon.

Breanna was drawn back from her memories to the dark empty room when she heard something. The window cracked, then fell on the floor. It shattered, as if it were a framed picture. She stepped back, away from the barron wall. A large crack appeared on the wall, then something creeped in. A thick black liquid oozed in. Breanna's hands went up to her mouth, to keep her from screaming. The virus spewed out tentacles from the mass, wrapping itself around her. Slowly, it began to corrupt her inner mind.

Beth... Baracia... Belle... Envi.... Help me!" she screamed.

\*\*\*

Envi jut up in bed. A cold sweat clinging to her body. She looked around the room, at her younger sisters laying on the floor. Even though they were as hostile as cats, dogs and wolverines, they were only children. Beth had her back against the wall, Bell's head on her lap, and Baracia's head on her shoulder. So cute, Envi thought to herself. A cool chill ran up the girl's spine. Why hadn't she noticed the change of temperature in the dorm? She looked around. Kaj was asleep, the blankets pulled up to her nose. She stood up and walked to the other window in the dorm. Chii's and Jazmyn's window was wide open. Envi walked over to it. Her fingers on the frame, she began to close it, when she stopped. Envi looked at the empty bed, then Chii sleeping with the bankets covering most of her head. Shivering.

Out of the darkness reached a hand, grabbing onto Envi's hand. Jazmyn looked at the girl. "What are you doing at this hour?!" Envi hissed.

"Lookin' at the stars." she whispered.

"Well it's fricking cold out there." Envi said, pulling herself out onto the window. She almost fell out, but Jazmyn grabbed her. "What the hell are you sitting on?"

"There's like six inches on here." Jazmyn whispered, pointing to the area below the window. "What did you think? There was a balcony?"

"...Yes." Envi sat on th windowsil while Jazmyn sat on the small platform. "Really, why are you out here?"

"Just looking at the stars." She murmured. Her arms hugged herself, the chill probably getting to her. Envi thought the girl was crazy. Even if she was a vampire, the least she could do was wear a jacket



over her thin dresslike gown. "Woundering things." The moonlight lit up her soft smile, then her smile faded. "Do you see that?" Jazmyn's finger went out, pointing in the luminesant lit forest. Envi's eyes adjusted, and she saw it too. She came back. "Is that a little girl?"

"Breanna!" Envi said under her breath. She slid back inside the dorm, and woke up Chii, Kaj and her sisters. "We gotta go. Now."

\*\*\*

Dressed in jeans and jackets, the girls ran into the forest. Beth, and Baracia in the lead. Then, in the darkness, Belle was struck first, getting thrown through a mass of trees. Breanna turned on Baracia then Beth. All three robots were disbled in minutes, going into a hybernation like state.

"Prototype 001.2... Nice ta seeya 'gain Sis." his voice rang clear in her ear. His hands went on her shoulders and he said something else in her ear. "How nice to see all my little sisters." Without realizing it, or even reacting to his movements, Envi was thrown into the ground. He stepped on the center of her back, almost breaking her spine. The black hair in his face, the boy turned to the other girls. "And you've become friends with these organic pieces of shoot?! I've read Beth's mind to see what the frack you were talking about, lower life forms. I thought she meant aliens, or even prototypes series 002 or 003. But you've totally went past that, now havent you Invidia? Halfbreed humans! Not even real humans! Ha!"

"Let her go!" shouted Chii. She was thrown into the ground also, pain searing through her body. 'He's...! He's fast...!' She quickly wripped off her wrist bands. With those weights off at least she could keep up with him. "Shadow clone no jutsu!" Thirty Chiis appeared. "Now try that shoot again!"

He grinned. "Really, Invidia. You could do so much better." The boy clicked his fingers, and creatures in the darkness came out. Snarling and baring their fangs, the girls saw that the creatures were none other then the Chime-Demons from a few days ago. "Look at my new friends Sis." His aqua colored eyes laughed.

Envi got up. God this shoot hurt. "Do you know... How hard it is... for me... to get my hands... on new parts?!" She used her hands to get her bangs away from her eyes. "If you were really my bro, I woulda kick ya @\$ \$ along time ago." Her ears turned into metalic antenai, and her hands transitioned so the silver mechanicas were visible. "What's yer name, punk dog?!"

He laughed, his hand went down and pet one of the Chimeras. It's mouth opened, and it's tongue hung out, like a dog that was happy to be praised. "I'm prototype 001.1. The very first of the Hermes project. Adam, to all existing programs. And Ignacio Rodunn. Big brother to prototypes in all series. But you can call me Envy. With a 'y'."

They were quiet. Thinking out their next move. He was just as fast and strong as Envi, and saw their moves before they could think them.

"...That's stupid." Jazmyn finally said. "If your name's Ignacio. Your nickname should be Nacho."

"Shut up you organic meat puppet!" Envy snarled.

"And what the hell is that around your eyes?! Purple eyeshadow?!" Jazmyn let out a loud laugh.  
"Nacho."

"You organics think you're so high and mighty. Well let me tell you something." Envy disappeared. He reappeared seconds later, in front of her. His fist crashed into her side, sending Jazmyn into the rocky ground. "You can die." The blade in his hand tore through her jacket, sinking a few inches inside her ribs. "I can't."

"Bastard!" The group of Chii's came down on him. Throwing masses of kunai and shuriken. Envy looked at her without a sweat, puffs of smoke erupted from the destroyed doppelgängers. He threw Jazmyn at the real Chii. "Gyaaaah!"

He looked at Envi. "How 'bout you get destroyed by your own sister?! Hmm Invidia?!!" He snapped his finger, and the blue haired girl appeared beside him. Her pink eyes glowing. Envy ruffled her hair, she gave a small giggle.

"Yes, Brother?" she said sweetly.

"Destroy them." he replied. Breanna nodded. The little girl's smile beamed with joy. Then the girl's joyous features turned into a crazed look that reminded Envi of the way Beth had looked.

Breanna's digits separated, lightning jumping off her fingers. Envi tried to stand up, but something held her in place. Her eyes grew wide as the heat from the electricity stung her face. But to her surprise she was still alive, and the electricity sparked a few inches away from her nose. Envi saw Beth, Baracia and Belle holding Breanna. Beth held her left arm, Baracia held her right, and Belle hugged her tightly around the waist. She snarled and kicked Belle wildly. The girl gripped her tighter.

Breanna's pink eyes glared at Beth, then Baracia. Her arms out, and palms still open, Breanna sent a wave of electricity through all their bodies. As her sister's grips loosened she approached Envi. Her hands out, in Envi's face again. Envi sat on the ground, her legs under her and her arms barely supporting her. Breanna's crazed smile faded, and Envi saw something flash in the back of her mind.

In darkness, Breanna was entangled in a mass of black tentacles. Pulling her into the darkness, her beautiful Sky eyes were now glazed over with tears, and her voice was no more than a whisper. 'Help... me... Invidia.'

The girl's hands glowed with power, tears overflowing from her pink eyes, they flashed in between the two colors, as the last part of her mind was finally submitting to the virus. Her eyes turned solid crimson, and the last part of Breanna was as good as gone. Envy laughed maniacally, "Killing five birds with one stone!!"

"Your killing Breanna too?!!" screamed Jazmyn. "Why are you doing this?!! They're your family!!"

Envy tilted his head to look at her, a demented smile on his face. "You organics. The only thing your

good for is a good bloody war and sex." His grin grew broader, showing off all his teeth. "And I'm not killing her. As soon as Hashish finished it's mission, her body will self destruct."

"No..." Her voice said shakily. "Because I'm going to kill you before the virus kicks in."

"I've scanned your memories Sis. You're totally missing a giant chunk of it and many of your functions-programs." Envy put out his right arm. In a flash of dim light, his entire arm sprouted armor which was silver and spiked. His fingers separated and black metal peeked through. Electricity sparked and jumped from finger to finger. "You're no threat."

Envi reached in her pocket and pulled out the bunny-tract. Pressing the nose, and eye buttons it glowed and melted into the palm of her hand. Similar armor to Envy's appeared on Invidia's left arm. Though it had spikes, instead of being jagged and rugged like a serrated blade, Envi's armor was sharp and graceful, and looked almost like feathers. Envy's was black with a light green light on the silver on his hand, Envi's was black with a dark green light on the back of his hand. "Bring it."

## 12 - Brother-Sister Love; Alternate Life

chapter nine: Brother-Sister Love; Alternate Life

Chii brought pulled out a scroll and drew her blood on it. A line of rope was pulled out of the enchanted paper. Tied to it, about every six inches apart, were kunai knives. She wrapped it around three Chimeras, killing them. They died, splirting a black miasma on the trees. The poisan ate away at the bark, killing and decaying the tree, what would take fifty years, happened in three minutes. "Damnit all!"

Taking the bladed weapon, she roped a chimera around the neck. It snapped it's head off, again the black miasma spat out. She jumped out of the way just as it's body spewed the black fog and toxic liquid. The miasma was accidently spilt on a another Chimera. The acid ate through it's body, his shrieks of pain filled the air. Chii smiled, she just got the greatest dead ever. Chii dodged the attacks and made their bodies weapons against other Chimeras.

"Sword of the Fall!!!" The blade cut the demons, and they melted away. A chimera drew it's head up and protruded its chest. In a quick motion, it spat out acid at her. "Damnit!" Using a wall of fire, Kaj was thrown back. "WTF was that?!!" More chimeras came at her, spitting acid on the flames left by the last one. The black goo was quickly engulfed in flames, exelarating the blaze. The ground exploded, sending the girls back.

Jazmyn cut the chimeras to shreds, their black blood flying everywhere. Why the hell were these things here?! She had seen, just behind the ears on the neck, neon green marks. She remebered seeing the same mark on little Wes's forehead when they had first fought. Whoever summoned these creatures, had taken control of the fire pup. Someone wanted them dead. But why?

\*\*\*

up in the sky... about 100 feet up. Like Baracia, Belle, Beth and Breanna, Ignacio and Envy could fly. (very scientificl sentence>>) The antigravity purpultion system let them off the ground, then the partical manipulators made them move. Eh. Magnetic pulsars and aero traverser... and stuff!

"ION CANNON!!!" Charged particles came from his armor, burning the air around her. Envy flew at him, her fury never slaking. Breanna! Her baby was going to die, unless she did something! Both her bionic arms went together, the mechanics connecting into one gun.

"NULLIFY BLASTER!!!" She screamed. It blaster a hole through him. Envi smiled, but her smile faded when a scorching pain went through her side. "Bastard!"

"I was made before you! The original!" Envy snarled. He had, somehow split himself in half. One of his bladed hands when through the back of her ribs, all the way through her to the front. "The magic of nanobots! But of course you can't do this..." He leaned his half face to her ear. "Because you're almost as lowly as an organic."

Her hands seperated and they wrapped around Envy's bladed hand. She twisted it and tore it through

her. The hole in her side closed and she threw down the now scrapped arm. "SCREW YOU!!!" The palm of her hand opened, and she attempted to blast him out of the sky. Envy's untarnished hand opened, and he formed an energy field. The jolts of fire and electricity bounced off the shield, and struck anything in it's way. The ground, the air, the trees, and the chimeras.

He closed his eye and his body reconnected itself. Good as new. In the blink of an eye, Envy had appeared beside her and gave her a side swipe kick. It made a deafen 'CRAK!' as the steel in his leg and her metal ribs met. "Why are you holding back dearest sister?!!" As Envi fell out the sky, Envy appeared beside her, and side swiped her a second time. Shattering her exoskeleton-armor, showing off her insides. "WHY?!!!"

The truth was, she wasn't holding back. Invidia Rodunn, was almost spent. Her left arm was torn, and part of her nullify-blaster was scrapped. Her power was about, twelve percent left. And if Ignacio was to keep up this... she was going to die.

\*\*\*

Beth punched her fist through the chimera's skull, black blood spilling on her fingers. It had already eaten away much of her prosthetic skin, her silver mechanics on both arms up to her elbows. Hurt like fracking hell, but she was too pissed to care. Part of her grey-silver skirt was burned away, her metallic eyes looked uncontrollably-insane, furious that, again for the third time Breanna had beaten her. One lept out at her. She grinned a crazed grin, her lips pulled back to show off almost all her teeth. Her pupils shrunk to pretty much nothing, the metallic hues taking over her entire eye. The wrist blades jutted out of her hands, they were twice as big as before. "HNNRAAAAAGHHHH!!!" She split the creature from the tip of it's nose to the tip of it's tail.

Other chimeras looked at Beth, shivering with terror. She wasn't afraid to get hurt by the acid, or poisoned from the miasma. She wasn't afraid of them, because they barely affected her. Beth saw their gazes and smiled at them. "Goody Goody." They attempted to turn and flee, but she out ran them. Beth jumped up in the air and brought down her crazed fury on them. Impossible moves, because if a human attempted these shots and punches it was most likely there spines would sever from their nerves.

Fighting back tot back, twins Belle and Baracia, fought with just as much, if not more, animalistic brutally as Beth. Belle dodged the chimeras with elegant, ballet like steps, then tore their heads off moments later with the same elegance. Baracia used her bladed hands to hook, and crash the creature into the other. As Belle kicked a Chimera's head upward, snapping it's neck til it's nose touch his spine. Out of the darkness, hooked tentacles wrapped around Baracia's wrists. Belle's fingers opened and merged, forming into two katana like blades. All three robot sisters looked around them. The carnage around them, the cries of pain from the dying Chimeras. Then up at the sky. Flashes of neon green and red lights flashed.

"She should be winning!" screamed Beth. "WTF IS THIS INVIDIA?!!!!"

"I don't get it! She had the damn bunny tract!!!" hissed Baracia. A stinging pulsated through her arm, the latex-like skin burned away slowly.

"It didn't activate completely!" said Belle. "Only she can fully activate it... and she fracking forgot."

\*\*\*

Envi began falling, but was caught by Envy. He kept pumpling her, kneeling her in the stomach, knocking her upward. Her took hold of her right arm, then twisted it. Her green eyes looked at him. Never had she thought this could happen. Her, one of the fastest, strongest students at Mercy, at the will of some rogue who's still was an unnatural copper, and his eye lashes a shade of metallic mauve. Envy kept twisting her arm.

"Well looks like Little Breanna's savior is nothing but a coward!" There was a loud crunch and her arm came off. "You failed her!! Just like you failed Mother."

"Nullify Blaster...!" The cannon shot off through his stomach, leaving a gaping hole in it's wake. At that moment, Envy's harddrive froze, and he dropped Envi. She fell to the ground, and crashed into the rocks. Her lime ringed eyes looked up at him. Her head turned and she saw Breanna, still struggling with the Hashish. Jolts of blue electricity jumped around her. She screamed out, her beautiful voice now shrieks of pain and terror. 'She's a robot... and if she dies...'

'She'll cease to exist.' said the flas back. 'Never let anyone kill you. You aren't human, so you can't be sent to heaven or hell. You're my Robots. And if you get damaged beyond my repair...!' Then she saw something that scared her... she never wanted that to happen to Breanna... her little Sister...

Envi stood up. She could barely keep her balance. She looked at Envy, both her eyes glowing brighter then before. "Activate Nova Program." A small protion of her memories returned, and the bunnytract activated.

Her arm came back to her and a mistlike substance reconnected it to her body. The black armor she wore, which had been scratched, broken and spikes torn clear off, was now fixed good as new. Better even.

"I WON'T LET YOU TAKE MY SISTER AWAY FROM ME!!!" screamed Envi. The spiked feather-like metal on her arms merged to form a blade, and she struck Envy across the chest. His armor was torn away, and his body was opened to reveal his black and silver mecha insides. Envi pointed her baster at his chest ready to destroy the bastard. He light green eyes looked at her, as if smiling. Her hand was engulfed in wires, that drove themselves into her skin, hurting like hell. Envy held her from behind, the wires delving into her spine and ribs.

"Very soon.. you'll join her... little sis." his voice whispered. "I will absorb your body, and become more powerful then any of your damn organic friends!"

\*\*\*

1522 a.d.

"Mother..." she whispered. "You shouldn't exert yourself like that!" The teenager rubbed her mother's arm with green mint oil to relax her strained muscles. "You're sick as it is. And with Grandfather ill... who will take care of the family?"

"Well, Daughter of mine. If you're so worried about the family, why don't you do something about it?" Her mother ran her fingers through her dark brown hair. Her auburn eyes smiling all the time.

"Me?! What about Cousin Tiya?! He's older!" The teenager flattened her skirt, only to ruffle it up again. She picked at the beaded edges, then the shark tooth around her neck. "I'm no leader mother. You're the eldest child of Kurong and Marin. You should be the leader, not me!" Anu fiddled with the beads in her black hair. "I'm clumsy, and slow, and I can't even come close to Brother!"

Her mother looked at her, both there auburn eyes meeting. "Well. Brother isn't here anymore. And I name you heir. I'm sure you'll lead the tribe just as well as your brother, Anu." She held her daughter's hands, her tan skin looking much lighter on her own daughter's brown skin. "May Brother Tsa, rest in peace."

\*\*\*

A chimera lept out at her, she brought her swords down on them, cutting open its head. 'WTF was that?!' Jazmyn thought. She's been having these weird dreams, not even when she was asleep, about things that happened four, maybe five hundred years ago in some place. Palm trees, ocean. Hawaii? No... not quite... "Damn it all!" A chimera's tail swiped across her stomach tearing her shirt, and cutting into her skin shallowly. "R-Roxas!!" She sliced the creature into shreds and soon after, turned to ash. Her hand felt over the wound, the blood tingling her fingers. The small amount of poison in her veins... much less than when Kaj was attacked, began to burn her skin and muscles. Three more chimeras seemed to grin at her, expecting her to go down. Then the pain bubbled over her wound, like it was actually on fire. "Ahh...!" Her fingers touched the slice tenderly. A tear streaked down her cheek, out of all the physical pain she ever felt, this hurt most. "Ihhh..!" Then, in the back of Jazmyn's mind, something whispered to her,

'...Ashes to ashes,  
dust to dust,  
Ocean blood shall be shed,  
and land blood marked,  
when the contract is broken,  
and the words are spoken,  
Death will ensue...'

'Sssssssssuch power...' hissed one. Its six black eyes blinked.

"Yessssss we sssshall have feassssst!" said another.

The third one took no time at all, but lept at her, fangs bared. "RAUGH!!!!!!!!!"

The vampire leaned against a tree, steadying herself. From the corner of her eye she saw it come at her. In the blink of an eye, she took it down. Her clawed hand going straight through its skull. It gasped and choked, and its eyes looked at her, almost falling out of its sockets.

Her skin was scorched into a black coal color. Her golden eyes laughed, and with a swift pull, her hand was free. It was on the ground, squirming and twitching. Part of it's head was missing, and the others backed up. "Your fate hath been signed." she said.

\*\*\*

"What? Where am I?" asked Envi. She was in her school uniform again. It's black pleeted skirt with a thin ivy trim and white blouse with the same colored collar. Her black tie. She looked at her hands, then her skirt. A mirror appeared, coming up slowing from the floor. In the mirror was a reflection of herself, then the vision grew younger until she was almost seven. Her dark brown hair turned blue, and Breanna stood there, looking at her. Her hands went up to her face, they rubbe her tear streaked eyes as she cried out for her.

"Invidia!!! Help!" she cried. Envi instinctively reached for the doorway. But her hand bumped against the glass. It was still a mirror. Dark ominous shadows formed around Breanna and her cries became heart wrenching screams of terror. Invidia's hands pounded on the glass. She finally drew her hand back, then struck the mirror as hard as she could in the center. Her eyes looked at the mirror. It was now empty, not even reflecting Envi. She felt a small part of herself die. Envi wondered if this was how Jaz felt when--

"No...!" Envi snapped. "...You aren't gone...! Not now...! AND NOT EVER!!" Her hand went through the mirror. Through the blackness, she grabbed her hand. The little frail Lolita Doll. Her hair, which had been a bright sky blue, was now a pail and faded silver. Her eyes were a dull grey instead of the lively warm navy. Her skin was torn, and the bottom half of her body was gone. As if some sick bastard had torn her legs right from their sockets, and tried to tear out her wires. "--Bre-Breanna...!" She murmured.

The little girl spoke, her voice bouncing from tone to tone due to the fact she was slowly malfunctioning. "SisTer InViDiAhhh... I thay-ahnk you. Sisster... I-I-I Luv-vuh... You."

\*\*\*

Electricity crackled in the sky, shattering the air, and making it feel tense and thick. Kaj and Chii both felt it, so did Beth, Baracia and Belle. Envi was...

Tears in her eyes, Belle went for the bastard. His light green eyes changed color. The white cornias had darkened until they were black, and his pupils and irises turned into a sickly metallic green. He saw her coming and struck her down. She crashed into the lake, the ground shaking when she reached the bottom. "Now that I'm complete..." He turned to Baracia and Beth. "The REAL fun will begin."

"FUN IS RIGHT!!!" screamed Beth, her crazed eyes looking furious. A tear streamed down her cheek. The blades jutting out of her wrist quadrupled in size and engulfed her entire hands. "AS IN frack YOU NANOASTARD!!!"

A sonic boom omitted from Beth as she flew into the sky. The ground reverbarated, and a dip was left in the earth from where she once stood. Envy dodged her attacks, then kneed her into the sky above. As she fell, he worsened her failure by punching her square in the back, sending her too into the lake. Tidal waves beat against the shore, the force from the punch alone breaking the sound barrier.



Baracia's hooked blades grew, from only being her fingers to her entire arms. The small, petite hooks, that looked small enough to wring out someone's eyes, became fierce and into large whaling hooks. If she wanted to she could tear someone's bones out their body. With fury that rivalled Beth. And just as easily as he had beaten her other sisters, Baracia went down into the rock. He laughed, seeing Kaj and Chii, Envy laughed harder. "I'll take you all out with a gift from Invidia." His right hand went out, a cannon forming among his armor. "NULLIFY--!!"

vital stats of Lolita Dolls

001.6... offline

001.5... offline

001.4... offline

001.3... offline

001.2... Online

A large crack formed on the metal on his chest. Smaller cracks formed from it. "WHUH--?!" A hand jutted out from the armor, her fingers wrapped around the cannon, smashing part of it. There was a blinding explosion. A wave of power and heat engulfed the air above them, it traveled to the ground and destroyed all the Chimeras. Kaj, and Chii shielded their eyes from the killer. When they felt the cool darkness again, their eyes opened.

Envi knelt on the ground. Her body was hunched forward over the small frame, or what was left of, Little Breanna. Her armor was gone and her tan skin was patterned with silver and green markings. On the top of her head was a pair of white bunny ears, with little pink button earrings from the base to the tips on the outside. Envi gently placed Breanna next to Kaj. A soft smile on her face, then she turned to Envy. Her eyes turned the same as his, but retained their unique greens. She came at him, matching his speed and strength. She sent him back, then her arm came and tore off the remainder of his cannon, along with his arm.

Envy drove her heel of her boot into his side in a hard roundhouse kick. "Bunny-Bunny Shot!!" Envi's fist went through his side.

\*\*\*

"Hmm..?" She looked up at the lights and small explosions in the sky. A small smile came to her lips, and a little laugh came out. She covered her mouth, so only letting a giggle escape. "Your tamer's off fighting and you can't even fight a little girl." The chimeras' slayer waved her hand and a black leather book with a feather pen appeared. She dipped the tip of her quill in the acid like blood and wrote in the small book. Her hand writing flourished on the line, and weird as it was, the acid didn't eat the pages, but was absorbed and turned red. "Damn alchemists... these things don't even have full souls. shoot."

Another group of them came at her. One of them tore the book from her hands. He sunk his teeth in it, tearing pages out. Her eyes looked at him. Fury in them. She kept her hand flat then drove it through the top of his head. She took the small journal back and looked it over. The pages healed themselves, and she wrote another name on it. A fire exploded through the small group of chimeras, and Kaj came running up to her.

"How goes your share of monsters?" she asked. Kaj looked around at the hell delt on the chimeras. There were rows of corpses, cut in half or sliced into pieces. The girl wrote another name in her book, then looked at Kaj. "Jazmyn! Your hands!!"

She closed the journal and it disappeared in a puff of smoke. "Just some third degree burns. They'll heal by tomorrow." Jazmy shot her a charming smile.

\*\*\*

Now the tables had turned, Envy was torn apart and Envi was the one doing the tearing. He only had one arm and one leg. A good portion of his ribs were destroyed and he was missing his left eye.

"I'm willing to let you live... if you deactivate the Hashish program." Envi said, level headed and not the least bit tired.

Envy glared at her. Furious. This little dog, had beaten him. This prototype lolita oo1.2. The copy. The duplicate. Had beaten him. "Breanna!!" he shouted. The girl appeared beside him. His arm wrapped around her and he spoke in her ear. "Access code 09283847-2938."

A computerized murmur escaped her lips. "Detonation in...9...8.." Envi flew at them. She cursed him for setting the timer for a matter of seconds. "...3...2...1...0."

\*\*\*

"Ugh!" groaned Chii. "We're probably the only students who've been here tis many times." She flopped back on the cot, her arm over her face.

Kaj stood up and began to put her uniform on, when Ryuta came in. "Where the hell do you think you're going, Delia?"

"I have a test and I'm feeling much better." said Kaj. "Chii come on." The young ninja was already up, putting on her skirt.

"What about Envi and Jazz?" Chii thumbed towards the closed off area of the ward.

"You're all a bunch of knuckle head fighters..." mumbled Ryuta. "And ladies are supposed to be well cultivated, and good natured. I swear. You're worse then the boys." The inu wman flipped through her clipboard, checking things on Envi and Jazmyn. "Miss Invidia already left with her sisters. But Miss Lun hasn't woken up y--"

Before Ryuta could finish, an ear splitting scream filled the air. They all ran to her, and tore back the curtain. Jazmyn's arms flung around Chii, and she squeezed her close. Sobs shook her body, but when Chii looked at her eyes, there were no tears. The vampire girl weezed, and tried to stop her hyperventilating. Ryuta gently, but forcefully, pried Jazmyn off Christal. She gave her some water, and an aspirin. She took them, and calmed down some. She was still shaking, her eyes glancing around the room, as if expecting something. Ryuta cast a minor spell on her, and Jazmyn was asleep again.

"She'll be alright." The inu rubbed her temples, then let out a sigh. "Those monster must of been some challenge if she screams like that." She turned to the fire demon and the ninja. "You were so rushed to get out. Shoo. Shoo." She waved them off.

As Kaj left, she thought she heard Jazmyn murmur. Kaj just shrug and left. She was sure, whatever the problem, Ryuta would have the vampire up and running again. Little did she know... it wasn't a physical problem, but a psyche one. "...muh... mom..."

\*\*\*

When they were gone, someone slunk into the infirmary. He looked at the girl, sleeping like a baby. He reached in his pocket and pulled out a small falcon shaped statue. A shen-gong wu. He called out it's name. "shadow of fear." He turned into small black molecules, that floated around for a moment, then went into the vampire's ear. She stirred slightly, a frown on her face. "Nrrngh..!"

\*\*\*

In the dark, just standing there in the only spot light in the room. Too afraid to move from the light into the shadows. Not because of the darkness itself, but for what was there. The five year old tried to calm down, her heart beating rapidly in her chest. She wringed her hands and stuttered out words. They came out as nothing but jumbled up syllables. She tried to reach out, past the darkness, but as soon as she did something grabbed onto her hand. She retreated to the light, pulling her arm from it's grasp. The child fell off balance and onto the floor.

She hugged her knees, and looked out. "Get... get out...! Please!" she whispered. "Just leave me alone!" Another light went on. Standing feet away from her, was someone. She had her back to the girl, so she couldn't make out her face. She had on a dress with all sorts of green and tan colors. Her hair was down, nearly reaching her waist, and had a few sections decorated with beads. "Mom?!"

She stood up, her arms out. "Please...! Come back...!" The woman didn't listen, she began walking in the opposite direction. The light above her followed. "Don't leave me...!" The light dimmed, and she was gone. She rammed her hands through the darkness. Again, the clawed hands grasped her, but she didn't care. The girl wanted her mother. She wanted her now. Her hands were sliced up, but she still didn't care.

A mouth appeared beside her ear. Just a mouth. Lips, teeth and tongue, but no face or head. It spoke to her, with an odd accent. "Well go after her. Or are you afraid?" She didn't answer. The other light was gone, so if she did run after her, would she really catch the woman? "Afraid of what you hope isn't true? That she couldn't keep you because of what you were... or..."

"Come back!!" She couldn't do anything. Her hands instinctively went to her sides, fit clenched tightly. "Mama...!...come...back...!" Tears streamed down from her face. She wanted the voice to shut up. To go away. But it didn't.

"Or... that... she... didn't... want you at all?" the mouth smiled. "Because of what you are. Haaaaaalfbreed."

## 13 - this isn't a chapter. LIVE ACTION!!!

I have 2 really good reasons why I haven't posted chapter 10 yet. Here they are.

Reason number 1:

on friday the 18th:

My original chapter was accidentally deleted, due to the fact the Save button and the Open button are next to each other... Yep that's right, I saved a blank document of Mercy Girls. So for a short time I was freaking out, then after thirty minutes I pulled out my USB flashdrive and began to rewrite it. I wrote down all the major points of the episode, and thought of new ways to present the problems, because I was 7/8 done, I hadn't read over it yet to check for spelling errors. DX

Reason number 2:

on sunday the 20th:

As I was ready to check my hotmail and deviantart messages, I sat in the cool grass in front of my church. Thinking it was safe to use my laptop out in the open. frack was I wrong. Some punk @\$@ fracker, stole my computer right from my lap. Right when I was typing to a friend. I gave chase, but you know what the coward did?! Run behind the church, in the little forest. I couldn't follow him because 1) I was wearing slip in shoes, and 2) I was in a long blue jean skirt. So yeah. Everything I've been working on (stories, drawing, schoolwork, information) everything is gone. Because, it's most like they aren't using it, but selling it to someone else. So I'm really sorry if you guys were expecting the chapter. I'll post it by at most, friday. DX DX DX

BASTARD STOLE MY BABY AND MY BABIES!! \*runs off and cries\* read the real story here>>

<http://jazmynmoon21.deviantart.com/journal/>

... yeah.... bye...

## 14 - Somethings...

Ok. to all muh readers, I must tell you, this chapter may/may not be the best I've written, but it should at least connect some dots. but I was too hot, and my brain may have melted on wednesday morning... SOOOO HAWT IN MICHIGAN!!!! DX

### episode 10: Somethings

\*\*\*

a few weeks ago...

The portal opened and he stepped out. He looked at his hands then at the ground where he stood. A design of mathematic details, astonimocal signs, and Latin words were spread around a circle. He blinked, his tan and blue eyes adjusting to the sudden light. Two others looked at him, He looked at the alchemist who had summoned him. "Where am I?"

"Tatsukyun." responded the woman. "You have been called on by Father to do the great deed."

"What deed?" he asked. Suddenly his gut wrenched and he fell to his knees. An over whelming pain filled his body, tugging and tearing at the inside his organs. "Glaurgh!" The woman stepped forward and knelt to his height. In her open palm she held out odd red colored stones. He took them hungrily and crunched them loudly. "What are these...?!" he asked, the sweet taste lingering on his tongue.

The white haired woman smiled at him. "Blood stones. Made from halfbreed souls and demon blood."

He stood up, the pain now gone. "What deed?"

The man with brown hair laughed. "To whipe little halfbreed demons off the face of the Earth."

\*\*\*

present day...

Envi looked at the Bunny shaped device. She pressed the buttons and it beeped loudly, but nothing else. She fiddled with it for a while, then grew tired of it, and tucked it away in her desk. Envi wanted to learn more about her 'Sisters', and more about who she really was. And for the fact that Baracia has a cannon, a Nullify Blaster even, in her arm. The girl sighed, missing them already. Even Ignacio, who because of their fight had somehow been reverted to a small child. Breanna explained it to her the night before. And The bell rang and she was off to first hour British Lit.

"When you activated the Bunny tract, it tapped into all our minds. Actually stopping Hashish, triggering your nano mechanics." The blue haired girl laughed."Since me and Ignacio were pretty bugged up, your programming actually pulled what little metal there was and rebuilt us. That's why he's a little kid now!" She hugged the little toddler, and they both giggled uncontrollably. He tugged on her now short neon blue hair, then fidgeted on the bed. "I luv my new little brother!"

'Well, we're sure as hell not keeping him!' snapped Baracia.

'The hell he put us through! We should destroy him now!' snarled Beth, getting her clawed hands ready. 'So he can't do it again!'

The little boy looked fearfully at Beth and Baracia. Without hesitation, they attacked. Breanna held the boy close and jumped out of the way. She held the toddler close and made a run for it. Swinging open the door, Breanna ran down the hall. She knew her sisters were merciless when it came to destroying, so she needed to hide him. A sideways kick knocked the boy out of her grasp. Beth came at him, a shrill scream coming from the child. Breanna punched Beth, sending a 900 watts of electricity through her.

A shocked look on the silver girl, and Breanna responded, "I will fight you! He's my brother and I want to keep him!!" Blue lightning jumped off her hands.

"Do you not remember what he did to you exactly six hours ago, Bree?!" screamed Baracia. "He used Hashish on you, made you try and kill us, and then the piece de resistance! A fucking self destruct sequence!"

"But that was because of the Dynamo-Virus!!" she said. "He didn't know what he was doing."

"Guys. Calm down." said Jazmyn. They turned to see her walking towards them with Nacho in her arms. One arm around him, the toddler sat on her hip. "If Breanna wants to keep him, I don't see the harm." She touched the tip of his nose and he giggled. "Nothing this cute could be a danger."

Kaj was walking, reading a book. She bumped into Jazmyn's back, then looked at the group, then the little boy. "What's going on?"

"They wanna kill Nacho!!" Breanna cried. Beth and Baracia glared at them, but retreated due to the new found respect they had for the girls. They were still disgusted by the organics, but respected them none the less.

Jazmyn set the boy on the ground, but he still clung to her leg. "Shouldn't you get ready to leave?"

Beth and Baracia looked at her, then groaned. "Well for once, I got to agree with you Organic." said Beth. "Breanna. Get the brat ready, we leave before dawn."

Kaj looked at the boy. He tilted his head back and looked at her upside down. "Up?" he asked. "Pwease? Up? Up?" As Jazmyn bent to carry the boy, Nacho wobbled over to Kaj. "Up?" His arms held out to her, his blue eyes looking at her. She froze where she stood, just looking down at him.

"Kaj?" asked Jazmyn, seeing her discomfort. The fire demon blinked.

"I'm too tired..." she said, quickly walking past them. "I'm going to sleep." Kaj couldn't do it. She just couldn't, not after... Logan...

\*\*\*

1792 a.d. England

Howlett picked up a comb and untangled his mahogany red hair. She touched the cut on his cheek, the nine yearold flinched. "How'd you get this?" she asked. The boy pulled away from her hand. Howlett gently, but firmly, held his face. She was careful of the cut this time. "It's alright. I won't get mad."

"Someone at school... called me a bastard..." he murmured. "...And we got into a fight..."

Howlett gave a soft smile. She stood up and walked away, a few minutes later was back with some bandages and different medicines. The iodine stung his skin a little, but after that, it felt cool and didn't hurt. Howlett opened a small glass jar and rubbed some aloe vera gel onto the open cut. "That should heal up nicely. Anything else I should know about? Logan?"

"No..." he whispered, looking away. Then he smiled grandly. "Mama, the rain's ending! Can we go out now?"

"Alright. Go get your coat." The boy ran out the room and retrieved his coat. Logan pulled on the wool clothing and thick rain boots. The woman laughed at how fast he was sometimes, and his emotions went from one thing to another... but that didn't matter anymore. After all her years of running, now she could slow down and have a life.

The weather was absolutely dreadful, but Logan still had a large smile. He ran and splashed in puddles, and laughed somemore. Howlett walked after him, holding an umbrella. She didn't like this type of weather, it made her feel... weak. When she had caught up to Logan, he had stopped to look across the street at something. Howlett stopped too, and looked at the same thing.

Two woman, dressed in gowns and cloaks of high society looked at Howlett and Logan. They both had umbrellas, and began talking behind their hands about them. Yes. Howlett knew it was them the Nobles were talking about, she could hear them.

"That's her. That woman!" whispered the first one. "She says her husband died before the little hethen was born."

"My, my my... I'm betting that's a bunch of lies. Probably ran off with his mistress." said the other. They both laughed then kept walking.

Logan's soft blue eyes turn to ice, furious. For he could hear just as well as his mother. The boy was gentle natured, but when provoked, was worse then any fullblooded demon. Howlett saw he was slipping, angry at the words they had spoken against her. Fire began forming around his hands. She quickly gripped his hands, holding them tight.

"I'm here, baby." she smiled. "I'm here." His eyes turned back to their happy glow. He squeezed her hand back, then pulled her into the puddles with him. Her skirts were dampened, soaked at the seams, but she gave little worry. If it pleased Logan, that's all she cared about.

They walked until they reached the river, there they would cross over to the other side of the road and keep walking. Logan stopped in the middle of the stone bridge, and looked over the side at the water. She heard the rain get lighter and lighter. She closed her umbrella and held out her hand. The rain had

indeed stopped, but a thin mist hung in air, still making her feel miserable.

"AHH!!" Logan screamed. Howlett turned to see a clear tentacle wrapped around him. It was the water, it had taken on a physical form and had the boy in a bind. Fire jumped from Howlett's hands, turning the water to steam. She reached out, trying to grab him. But the water shot out at her, knocking her into the smooth stone. Her eyes blurred, and she struggled to stand. "Mother! Mother!! NOO!!"

The water wrapped around her, pinning her against the wall. It froze to ice, and she struggled against it. Weakened because of the rain, she couldn't operate at full power. She screamed out to him, but... he was gone. Pulled down into the depths of the river. When it was gone, the ice melted, and she was free. She ran to the side of the bridge where the water had pulled Logan in. No. He was gone... and she knew who had taken him.

\*\*\*

SNAP!! Jazmyn's eyes opened to see her English teacher looking down at her. The woman's indigo eyes angry, and a scowl on her face. "Could you please read the next line?"

She blinked groggily, then sat up. Jazmyn looked at the page, she didn't know where the hell they were, and frankly she didn't care. So she just began reading. "The photograph quivered as Hampton handed it back..." her tone was monotonous. There were giggles all around the room, so Jazmyn knew she had the wrong page.

"Psst!" Chi whispered. "Page 194, 'Penny sat...'"

Jazmyn flipped the page in her book to the page and began again. "Penny sat on the edge of her bed, listening. The sounds came again. Scraping, hissing. A soft thump, a faint click, and again a thump. A far off, rattling, shuffling noise. Far off-- but getting closer." The bell rang. Everyone closed their books, and packed up. The teacher wrote somethings down in her gradebook, then glared at Jazmyn.

"So why'd you fall asleep?" asked Envi, "Didn't you get enough sleep last night?"

"Last night? Pfft!" Jazmyn blew a raspberry. "With all the racket with Nacho, Breanna and Beth?! 'Get off me!' 'Don't touch me brat!' 'Don't call him a brat!!' The list goes on." The vampire yawned loudly. She was lying through her teeth, but why let her friends worry? The truth of the matter was, if she were tired enough Jazmyn could sleep through any noise. The sounds from last night were murmurs, compared to the screams and arguments that were at the orphanage when she was young. Jazmyn didn't rest well, because of the nightmares. Worse than a few nights ago, where she dreamed of her mother, not wanting her. She yawned again, louder this time.

"...and then the applesauce exploded! Right on the table!" said Envi laughing.

"Ahh, yes. Good times." said Burn.

"When did this happen?" asked Jazmyn.

"This morning at Breakfast." smiled Elen. "I was practicing a new trick, and the spark fell in Kaj's



applesauce."

"Speaking of trick, I'm off next hour." said Burn.

"Us too." said Elen, Envi, and Chii. Elen turned to Jazmyn. "What about you? Did you already take Mr. Night's test?"

"GRAAAUGH!!" Jazmyn groaned. "I totally forgot! With all the damn fighting we did with those chimera thingies, the hollows... Verve Sectors... I forgot my due date!"

"Maybe he'll give you an extention on the due date." said Burn.

\*\*\*

"Sorry, but no." responded the man. Mr. Night scribbled a student's grade on the clipboard. Then flipped to another page. A chart of dates and names. Finding Lun, Jazmyn, he shook his head again. "Today's the day you go."

"...nrrrrrrruaaaaahhh..." she groaned, her eyes half open. He looked up from his clipboard at her, his silver eyes meeting her golden ones. The area around her eyes was dark, due to her lack of sleep. Yet, her irises themselves weren't dull at all, but seemed more vibrant then usual. "...Okay... let's get this over with..."

\*\*\*

"How do you think she'll do?" asked Daisy, sitting on the grass a few hundred feet away from the pair. "Do we really need to sit this far? I can't see squawt."

"Read the sign." Chi thumbed to a small pickette sign. 'For outdoor combat classes, all bystanders must be this far.' Small arrows pointed down at the ground. 'Right here. Not there. But here.'

Jazmyn looked at her friends gathered on the fleece blanket. They saw her looking and they each held up a piece of of paper that made a large poster. "GO JAZMYN GO!!

# 15 - Everything

## chapter eleven: Everything

"Oi!" her teacher shouted. "You ready?" He was dressed in a sweat suit, black with a white stripe down each leg and arm. And a pair of lifeguard sunglasses. He was more laid back, more relaxed. Jazmyn growled a little. He was late, by fifteen minutes, to his own class. Night was wierd, no wierder then wierd, he was a fricking enigma.

"You're the one who shows up late!" she snapped back, stifling a yawn. "Yeah. I'm ready."

"Rodunn!" he shouted in her direction. "Catch!" Night fished in his pocket and pulled out a stop watch. He pulled back his arm, and threw it easily, a hundred feet. "Press the button when I say go." He unzipped the top part of his suit and tossed it on the ground. Underneath he wore a grey tank that bared his arms. No one had ever really seen the man without his usual clothes, suit pants, a button down shirt and a tie.

Twenty... two? He was young, was all everyone was sure of. Somewhere in his early twenties. Ian Night was a vampire, like Jazz, Daisy, and Vee. But unlike any of them had specialized in unobjectal spells (spells without talismans, or incantations), mindspells and knew enough about the dark arts to teach how to defend themselves from it.

Jazmyn blushed a little. No wonder most of the girls had fawned over him. Night's frame was slender, but muscular, like a runner or a swimmer. His skin was a few shades darker then hers, and his eyes were silver. Night wore his hair short, but long enough in the front so he could spike it. "GO!!!"

The man disappeared. Jazmyn yawned again, and rubbed her left eye. Everything seemed to move in slowmotion, she was probably hallucinating. She leaned back, dodging his uppercut. The girl flipped back, completely avoiding him. When she stuck her landing, Jazmyn gave a suprised cry. Her hands went to her side, she left one of her ribs. It had been broken, without any contact. Her eyes opened fully to look at him.

"If you get attacked by something more advance then a hollow, what'll you do?" he asked. Night kept his body low and ran for her. Again, everything slowed down, and Jazmyn saw his movements. Instead of striding, and moving his arms like a runner, Night's arms were at his sides, and his hands back. A jaguar, that's what his style reminded her of. He struck her stomach with an open palm.

She felt his magical aura, it wasn't like anything she felt before. Jazmyn was lifted into the air, then thrown into the ground. Jazmyn's vision danced. 'Maybe she didn't want you!' Her eyes blinked.

Night brought another punch on her. "Fire style! Tiger!!!" The ground quaked when he made contact, sending out a cloud of dust. When the sand cleared, Night saw he hadn't knocked the girl out.

Jazmyn had her arms crossed, fists clenched, blocking his shot. "Earth style! Ox!" Her pupils had shrunk

to small needlelike slivers, like a cat. Her hands opened and she muttered something. "Fire style! Sakura-jin!" Small sparks jumped out the center of her palms, soon turning into wild flames. The fire engulfed them both, causing Night to retreat. He took a stance, ready for her next attack. The fires swirled around her, then her arms extended she sent them at her teacher.

Night punched the fire in front of him, sending it spiralling into nothing. Jazmyn's body swayed back and forth, he could see the fatigue rushing through her. He growled, grinding his teeth a little. Taking a deep breath he released more Chi through his hands. Night struck her stomach area again, open palmed, but she dodged like last time, this time completely evading his attack. Before her hands touched the ground, he kicked her in the back, sending her rolling across the grass. "Wake up! Damn you!"

She gasped for air, slowly standing up. "I'm too frackin' tired!!" she screamed, coming at him. Night turned a half rotation, dodging her punch, but couldn't escape her kick. Night was surprised at the power behind it. She dropped her head, breathing heavily. "I'm sorry... That I forgot... but I haven't slept well in a frackin' week... I haven't eaten in two days... I'm sorry if I'm a little PMSy!!"

Jazmyn hopped into the air, six inches above the ground, then disappeared. She reappeared above Night, and spun into a rollout kick. It hit him in the back of the head, making him lurch forward. He grabbed her ankle and threw her into the air, at least three miles up. He shot up after her. Jazmyn was thrown like a ragdoll into the air, her eyes wide. Night smiled a little, his silver eyes gleaming.

'Finally. This girl's a little frightened.' he thought, but realized the look in her eyes wasn't fear.

Her irises were wide, nearly taking up the entire cornea, but her pupils were only needles. "I'm not scared of you." she replied, a smooth monotonous voice. "I haven't had a fight like this... in years." When gravity finally took its toll, and Jazmyn began to fall, the real acrobats began. She kept her arms out, then her left leg in front of her right, spaced out two feet. Jazmyn leaned forward, sending her body into a spin.

Like a pinwheel toy. Night braced himself, blocking her attack. 'Interesting...!' As he was about to punch Jazmyn, she used the failed kick to push off him. Seconds later, her knees were locked around his neck. 'What is she doing?!' Both knees jabbing into his chin, his hands were behind his back, Jazmyn held them in place. '...so that's her plan...!' One last flip in midair, turned Night upside down, having him facing the oncoming ground.

Both of them crashed. Envi looked at the stop watch as it beeped. Ten minutes. "TIMES UP!!" she shouted.

When the dust cleared, Jazmyn was still holding onto Night, his body pressed against the ground. Her grip loosened and she hopped off him. The teacher stood up and dusted himself off. "You're just full of surprises aren't you?" he laughed. "Your defense needs a little work... And your offense... It's very unorthodox to stay the least. Your total grade is... let's see..." Night counted on his fingers then looked at the sky. "...B+? Or maybe an A-?... A-! Yep. God job Miss Lun."

Jazmyn grumbled at his, somewhat bubbly attitude. She turned and began to walk away. Her foot got caught on a rock, causing her to fall. Night gave a short laugh, and smiled, seeing how tired she was, working that hard on a final she forgot about. Jazmyn deserved a good rest. He walked over to her, and

gently tapped her with the tip of his gym shoe.

"Come on. Quit playing." he said. She didn't move. Night bent to her height, and checked her face. Her eyes were closed, and her cheeks were flushed. Jazmyn gasped shallowly, and moaned out softly. "Lun?" He felt her forehead. "frack." Night waved over to the other girls, and they came. "Go tell Ryota I'm coming with fever patient."

"Yes sir." said Elen.

He loaded her onto his back and headed back to school. Jazmyn's eyes opened halfway, and she watched everything go by. Blurred and dancing around her, she drifted off to sleep.

\*\*\*

"Stop it!" she screamed. Her legs carrying her as fast as she could. "Get out! Get out! Get out!" She screamed out, covering her ears.

The intruder followed her, his voice clear in her ears. Jazmyn ran down the long hallway with doors on either side. She tried a door every few feet, but each one was locked. Locked. Locked. Locked. She cried, tears streaming and voice walling. "Stop it! please! STOP IT!!"

"You killed her!" he laughed. "She died because of you!" He laughed even louder.

"Somebody! Help!" she tripped. And was at the mercy of her attacker. He stepped on her white nightgown, holding her in place. He raised a sword, then brought it down. The figure turned into smoke and was gone. She blinked out her tears, and got up again. "I don't wanna be here... I don't want to be here... Please... leave me alone."

The girl walked down the hall, then opened a door. The lights of the new hall came on one by one. She realized the room shown brighter than it should have, due to the lack of light fixtures. Her hand touched the wall, quickly pulling it away cool surface. Jazmyn turned to see a mirror that took up the entire wall. She looked at herself, dressed in her black and white school uniform, but the reflection was dressed in a pair of torn jeans and a black shirt with pink cherry blossoms.

She also looked younger, about ten or eleven, whenever her body hadn't quite blossomed. Jazmyn touched the mirror, but her reflection didn't comply. The girl looked up, but turned away, a small hiccup escaped her body. The small hiccups soon turned into sobs. '...That's right... I hated myself at this age...' she walked over to another mirror. This reflection gave her current age, not much change she noticed other than the length of her hair, which reached past her waist. The uniform she wore was from the last boarding school she went to. The reflection smiled at her, even though she wasn't smiling.

Every mirror held a different form of her, from different times of her life. Jazmyn stopped in front of the last mirror on the wall. It had a five year old Jazmyn, wearing a white underslip and a black ribbon around her neck with a small tear-shaped jade. The sleeves barely fit her skinny frame, she looked like a starving third world child. The little girl looked up at her, her big golden eyes brimmed with tears.

"Where is mother?" she asked, a low half moan. The older Jazmyn didn't have the answers, so she

turned and walked away. The little Jazmyn reached out the mirror and grabbed her hand. She couldn't face her, she didn't have the answers. "Please...? I just want Mother."

"I don't know." she whispered. "I don't know."

"Liar!" said the younger one, her voice shaking with sobs. "Why are you lying?"

"I'm you, remember? If you don't know... Then I don't know." Jazmyn said, not facing her still.

The little one kept repeating it over and over again. "Liar! Liar! Liar!" She grabbed Jazmyn's skirt and began hitting her back with her small fists. "You're lying! Tell me where mother is!"

Before Jazmyn could say anything, a voice responded. "She does know where she is." hissed a voice. "Six feet under." They turned to face another mirror, this one on the wall that conjoined the hall at the end. It was a large vanity mirror, round with a silver frame of lionsclaws and eagle wings. The little one clung onto Jazmyn's uniform, fearful to let it go.

The dark area inside the mirror cleared to show another Jazmyn. Her eyes were red, and her black hair was matted down on her head, and clung to the area around her face. She wore a white, practically see through, nightgown, that also clung to her body. A wet substance that the little Jazmyn didn't want to see. Large amounts of crimson blood, sprayed on in what must have been either a fight... or a slaughter. "Just like MeMe." She chewed on her long clawlike nails, showing off her three inch long fangs.

Her hands came out of the mirror and reached for the younger one. Jazmyn reached down and held her close. The vampire turned and ran, back down the hallway of mirrors or her life. The blood drenched demon laughed and followed after her just as fast.

A mirror blocked her way, but she was too scared to care. She bent over the girl and rammed into the glass. It shattered, and they fell. Slowly, like they had fallen in water. Fish floated around them, and stopped every few times to look at the girls. The demon jumped after them, nearly catching up. The little girl barried herself in Jazmyn's blouse and whispered something.

"Anu...protect us...!" The jade necklace glowed and something erupted from the gem. A great horned beast, with black fur and spikes down it's spine. Golden eyes, but the cornea was a distinguishing silvery blue, just like it's antlers and spikes. On each foot there were only two toes, and a thumblike digit that was turned up like a velociraptor.

The demon hissed at Anu, and Anu growled loudly. She retreated back to the mirror world, seeing the creature was too much of a challenge. Jazmyn fell to her knees, her ribs felt like they would break due to the speed her heart was going. The little Jazmyn breathed heavily, her eyes closed, and body quivering. Anu turned to them. It's grand snout breathed in their scent, pulled Jazmyn's hair and nibbled on her sleeve. It flicked out it's tongue over the little one. Seeing the danger pass, the huge animal walked around them and began in another direction.

'Follow.' she said.

"Where? This is my head! Why can't I--" Anu turned around and looked Jazmyn in the eyes.

'No question. just follow.' she said. 'Nightmares caused by intruder. Intruder wants you dead.'

\*\*\*

Burn Lynn sat in the library, reading the entire section on Telekinetics. She sighed heavily, then flopped on the pile of books. Damning what little knowledge she knew, and damning the repetative information in the books. Nothing new, 'Earth demons', 'Forest Nymphes' and blah blah blah. She remembered things that had happened the day before. Chimeras were climbing up the walls, and broke into the school. Fifty kids were badly hurt, and others had to be transfered to other schools. Danica had even threatened to tell the superintendant about Burn and Els hanging with the Shadow division. The dog was annoying.

"Halfbreeds this! And halfbreeds that!" Burn remembered Danica saying. Her azul eyes glowing with magic, "Maybe you are a halfbreed. I've never seen such ugly eyes like yours. They're the same color as that bastard Chase."

Enraged, Burn picked up a book, stood up, and pulled her arm back to throw it. Dreamer was sitting across from her, smiling her happiest smile. It startled Burn, making her stumble on the chair behind her.

"You'll get detention if that book get's damaged." she said. "Are these from the restricted section, are they?"

"Um, no?" she asked, nervously lying.

"Well that's good." said Dreamer, flipping through a book on Anthros. "Wouldn't want to kill you for reading forbidden material." Her dark green eyes looking over the brim of her glasses at her. Burn's orange eyes looked at her, keeping her cool composure. Dreamer's suave attitude melted into her playful one and she laughed whole heartedly. "I kid! I kid!"

Burn picked up the stack of books. "I was just angry... I didn't find what I was looking for." she said.

"Well, these books are quite old... I suppose we should get a few new ones." Dreamer waved her hand, and a dark vaporcloud formed. She reached into the vapor and pulled out a spiral journal. She quickly scribbled down a note. "Buy up to date articles on magic Ancestry." The journal disappeared along with the pen when she was done. "They should come by the end of the week. So any of these books... if you want... are yours."

Burn looked over the large stack in her arms. They were useless to her, she didn't find as much as she wanted on the subject. She had another though, they might be some good on the subject of who was attacking the school. "Thanks."

When Burn Lynn left, Dreamer sighed. "Hope you find what you're looking for... Sashiku."

\*\*\*

"She's fine." said Ryota. "Just a flu... Her immune system is pretty screwed up. With the lack of sleep and eating, she just pushed herself a lttle too hard." Ryota brushed the girl's hair away from her sleeping

face. Jazmyn stirred a little but didn't wake up. The nurse turned to Night. "I blame you."

He shrugged. "A flu is nothing but a cold for vampires." he said, his eyes half open. "By tomorrow she'll be up and about."

"That still doesn't excuse you." said the inu, tapping a plastic clipboard on his head. "Stop acting all high and mighty and think before you act you old Geezer."

"You're Thirty-two." he said dryly. His silver eyes looked at Ryota's purple hues. "That's a good ten years ahead of me." "That's not what I heard." she smiled, and said singsongly. "This girl has come down here to get bandaged every couple of days, Ian. I'd really like it if you weren't one of the people sending her in." He stuck his tongue out at Ryota when her back was turned. Smiled at him, then sent a punch his way. As he caught her fist, Night felt his hand tingle. Ryota slacked her hand, slipping out of his grasp. He looked at the center of his palm, the skin was seared off clear to the bone. Night made a disgusted face, then looked at Ryota.

"I could have been a teacher too, Mr. Night." she smiled, turning away from him. Ryota reached in the cupboard and threw him a roll of bandages. "Quit being such a hard @\$\$, Old Man. And loosen up."

\*\*\*

"Wher are we now?" asked Jazmyn. Massive bookcases lined the walls, reaching to the ceiling that looked like it could go on forever.

"Dreams." said the little girl. "This is where everything is stored."

"Doesn't this seem a little much?" asked Jazmyn. "For fifteen yeas of data?"

Anu yawned loudly, showing off her rows of teeth. Jazmyn saw the beast had two rows of teeth. Similar to the set a shark would had, but one was completely flat, like wisdom teeth. Her first row, closest to her lips with all razorlike, curved slightly inward for gripping. She sneezed, the quilts on her spine standing up. Her jaws leaned over the little girl, and picked her up by the spaghetti straps of her gown.

"I gotta go... we're not aloud in here." said the little one. Still hanging from Anu's mouth, little Jazmyn hugged Jazmyn around the neck. "Bye."

Anu took a few steps back, crouched her legs and in a 'woosh' was gone, up the sides of the library back through the mirror door. Jazmyn looked at all the books. She reached on the closest shelf and pulled one out. The book look years old, the leather binding ready to tear. Jazmyn skimmed through it, only to find she couldn't read any of it. It was all in a kanji-like script, hundreds of symbols per page.

"This is restricted Access." said a voice.

"Well, this is my mind, so I don't think it matters." responded Jazmyn, skimming through another book. Still covered in the the same wriitngs.

"You..." she said. There was a movement and a rattle of metal. A curved broadsword was on Jazmyn's

shoulder. "...Are the intruder."

\*\*\*

Kaj was asleep on her bed, a book on her face and her leg over the edge. She was so tired. It had started drizzling over an hour ago, and the weather had rubbed off on her. The air was damp, and heavy; it felt like her power had been drained from her body. Kaj didn't like this... she never again wanted to feel this weak, and she never had. Until today for some reason.

Whenever it rained, snowed, hurrnicaned, or any wet climate, Kaj had been at level. The lowest she had ever been was half power, but today... she could barely stand. There was a knock on the door.

She slid the book from her face. "Who is it?" she asked, not getting up.

"Burn, I got some stuff for you guys." shed said.

"It's open." said Kaj, pulling the book back over her face. 'So what do you have?"

"Books. I hoped they might have some information on my powers, but so far nothing. Just the same old, same old.'Earth demons' and 'forest nymphes and blah blah blah." Burn set them on the desk, some of them fell on the bed next to Kaj's shoulder.

Kaj slid the book off her face. She reached up and took hold of a book called, 'Elements and Their Forms.' She flipped through it, she stopped on a page about fire elementals. '...few are born. More are made from the corpses of loved ones, trying to ressurect them. Alchemy, is the closest one has come to creating real Pyrokinetics, but false humans...' Kaj tossed the book aside and picked up another one. 'Vampires, The Truth Behind the Fangs.'

'Yeah, I thought Jazz might find that interesting.' said Burn, sitting on the foot of the bed. "Her emotions are all over the place... With MeMe and her parents... Then Danica... And Chase is a handful on his own!"

"So how is he?" asked Kaj, speaking from under the book on Vampires.

"Who? Chase?" Burn turned her orange eyes at Kaj's azul and crimson hues.

Kaj grinned, showing off her sharp teeth. "Not him... I mean his friend... Lao Jiang?" Burn rolled her eyes. "he's kinna cute, dontcha think?" Kaj picked up another booth and sat up. She opened it on her lap and began to read. "..Maybe I'll ask him out sometime--"

"You can't!" said Burn. Her face turned red when she realized how loud she was. "I mean... you can't... because I..."

"Burn Lynn's got a crush!" laughed Kaj. "And on a Shadow Division student none-the-less!!"

\*\*\*

Chii and Envi walked down the hall. Towards the infirmary. The biodroid went ridged when she saw a



Verve Sector walk out the infirmary. Chii walked past her, but Envi stood where she was. She ran her fingers through her shoulder length earthen hair. The brunette strutted past like she owned the world.

Ever since she first came to Mercy, Envi had the strongest dislike for the girl. Her dogy attitude, arrogance... The Spanish girl couldn't stand her. And what she had said to Jazmyn, after MeMe died, had broken the camel's back.

"Danica Marat!" shouted Envi. The brunette turned, her sapphire eyes glowing. "What the hell did you do to her?"

She looked at the girl, a calm look, but her eyes ablaze in fury. "Hmph." Danica turned around and kept walking. Envi ground her teeth, then came at the witch. A fast uppercut, nearly struck Danica's side.

"Helmae deus!" A shield of white flames halted Envi's attack, sending her back a few steps.

"Why the frack is she sick?! Huh?! We all know how you hate Shadow Division, so why try and deny it?!" she growled.

"I'm not denying anything." snapped Danica. "But seeing how stupid you are..." Danica laughed. "I'm better than that Halfbreed in every way. I'm more graceful, more beautiful, and more magic abled. If I wanted to fight her, do you think I needed to really on dirty tricks like a flu?" Danica turned away, and kept on walking. "I'm a Marat. French blood. Noble blood. Why disgrace myself with trash like her?"

Envi dusted off her uniform. She cursed at the sight of her burnt hem. She shoved her hands into her jacket's pockets and walked into the infirmary. Chii was standing a foot away from the bed.

"Christal, what's up?" asked Envi. As she tried to approach the bed, she bumped into something. She rubbed her nose, then touched the invisible wall. "what the hell? Ryota! What's going..." Envi and Chii saw the Inu woman laying on the floor unconscious. "... on?"

"Well, first the dog, now a wolf and a doll." The Door slammed shut. "Hello Ladies. My name is Donovan... And I'm here to kill you."

## 16 - Satisfaction

chapter twelve: Satisfaction

"...so... What else is new?" asked Envi, her eyes narrowed. She ran her fingers through her hair, pushing her brown bangs away from her eyes. "I am really loving this school. Fun around every corner."

Donovan sat on the bed, next to the girl. His hand reached out, brushing her ebony locks away from her face. "Such a pretty little girl." he said. "Too bad." He unsheathed a knife from his belt. "She's going to die!" Her hand was at his throat before he could react. 'She's awake?!'

Her eyes were dulled, and glazed over, Jazmyn was still asleep. "Por que? Quiero que hacer?" Her grip tightened. "Que necesito el muerto... de Mi?" With the pressure on his neck, Donovan didn't realize his guard was down, and the shield had shattered. Envi came at him, her arms around his head and neck. Tight like a boa constrictor, ready to pop his head.

"I'll tear your damn head off if you so much as blink." Envi snarled in his ear. From the corner of his eyes, Donovan looked at her. Fury written all over both of them.

"Tell me Doll... Can you swim?" he asked.

"Why should I tell you?" she hissed, tightening her death grip on him.

"Hydrius portalius!" Both were engulfed in a mass of bubbles. A blinding light and they were gone.

The door slid open and Burn and Kaj walked in. "What happened?" asked Burn. "We felt a demonic aura... And now it's gone."

Chi looked at Jazmyn. She was fast asleep, again. "A demon tried to kill Jazmyn... But Envi caught him, now they're gone...."

Kaj spotted Ryota on the floor. She knelt next to the woman, and picked her up. She set the inu on a cot and pulled the blankets over her. Kaj noticed all the wet spots on the floor. "Why's there water all over the place?"

"The demon... I think that's how he got in... He said his name was Donovan." Chii saw Kaj's ivory white ears twitch, her entire body went rigid.

"What did you say?" she asked, just above a whisper.

"The water demon said his name was Donovan." Chii repeated.

Kaj turned. Burn and Chii both froze as Kaj stepped past them. The look she had in her eyes, it was a fury neither girl had ever seen. And a grin, where her sharp canines poked her upper and lower lips.

Excitement, and glee and fury and rage, all wrapped into one. She giggled a little, the sound made Burn and Chii shiver. The giggles were similar to the demented little girl Beth.

'A little water demon named Donovan...' she thought, as she closed the door. '...What a co-wink-ky-dink!' Kaj turned, and ran as fast as her demon body could take her. If what Chii had said was right... Then they'd be in the pool.

\*\*\*

"Woah!" Jazmyn jumped out the way, the blade missing her by a few centimeters. "I'm not the intruder!"

"Lies." said the guard. She tried stabbing Jazmyn, repeatedly, but the vampire kept dodging. "I shall destroy you... Whether it beith by request..." The Glaive cut through a book case, causing hundreds of books to fall. "...Or Force."

"I'm not the intruder!" she screamed.

"Oh?" The guard stopped. She adjusted her porcelaine mask with one hand, and the other held the large glaive. The bladed weapon gently lifted up Jazmyn's skirt. "Dressed in garb unknown to thee. Eyes like amber, and skin like the earth. Nay, surely, you are not the intruder, then who?"

"I don't know!" she said. The guard moved forward quickly, too fast for Jazmyn to react. Jazmyn's struck the weapon on the side of the blade, causing the metal to reverberate in the guards hands. It spin so the blade faced down, and she wrapped her arm around it. The guard grew angry and pulled the blade, swinging it free. She spin the weapon, and it sliced through Jazmyn's sleeve.

The material fell to the ground, revealing Jazmyn's left arm. A small mark apeared, thin vine like barbs that wrapped around her arm. Just an inch of two thick. The guard lowered her weapon, it disappeared in a black and silver vapor. "...Anu... My my my..." She scratched the back of her head. "...No wonder I could not recognize you. You look very different in this body."

"Anu? The big wolf with horns?" Jazmyn adjusted her skirt. "She's the one that lead me here." The guard looked at her. She laughed. "What's so funny?! You nearly cut me to ribbon!"

"Just thinking." she replied. Jazmyn looked at the woman. She was tall, and had a slender-tone body. She wore a dress that was split at the sides to show off her legs, and buttoned over the chest horizontally. At the shoulders the black material ended, and flourished into long white sleeves, that almost reached her knees. The trimm was red on the sleeves, vents and neckline. Her mask was black with sharp red points and a small horn on the top of the left side. The right side had a hole to show off her eye, an onyx black iris and a milky pupil. "I am Uong Zaizieate. You may call me A-te."

"Um hmm." Jazmyn narrowed her eyes at the woman. "Sure. You wouldn't know any reason why they'd bring me her--? Hey! I'm talking to you!!" A-te had begun to walk away. She looked over her should at Jazmyn. "Why am I here?"

"They?" asked A-te. "No reason... other then this is the safest place from the intruder. But if you stay here any longer, you won't wake up." A-te turned away and kept walking. "And die."

"Die?!" she asked. "Then how do I get out?!!!"

"What do you do in a library?" asked A-te, still walking. "That should give something to do." She crouched, then lept up the sides of the bookcases. And like the great Anu, A-te was gone. "Think about it, Child."

"but I don't understand the--!" screamed Jazmyn. But the masked woman was gone. "DAMNIT!!!" She rubbed her temples then picked up another book. "I wonder what everyone else is doing today?"

\*\*\*

Donovan and Envi came to the pool. He knew the doll was heavy, because of all her mechanics. He threw the girl in the water, with such force it would have shattered every bone in a normal human. But Invidia Rodunn was no ordinary human.

Seconds later, she shot out of the water. Remembering the moves between Night and Jazmyn, she spun herself into a deadly pinwheel. Her booted feet hit Donovan in the back on the neck, between his head and his shoulders. His body skipped across the pool, making a sickly 'CRACK!' as he hit the tiles on the other side. He began to sink, but Donovan climbed out the pool. His head hung by his flesh, his spine well shattered.

"Nice move..." Donovan's hands held the sides of his head as he reset it. He popped the crick out his neck, then smiled at her. "For a Doll."

"Pyrius lobo!!" A large Fiery wolf came behind Donovan. Its jaws clamped down on his body, then exploded.

"Aquos helmae!!" A bubblelike structure of water formed around him, extinguishing the attack. "Well, Niice to see you again Dearest Kaj."

Envi looked at the fire demon. 'He knows Kaj?!' Her gaze turned back to her opponent. He had fair skin, and black hair, with tips of indigo. His eyes where silveryblue, that had catlike pupils. Donovan wore white clothes with blue trim. "You're looking as pretty as ever."

"Draconius flauritu des Ignituu!" Flames lept from her hands and danced across the water. Snaking their way to Donovan. He raised a wall of water, causing waves of steam to cloud the room. "You took him..." Kaj appeared beside him, her fist smashing into the side of his face. "Didn't you?!!"

In a shift hand movement, all the steam had turned back to water, then into a sword of ice. "Who, Dearest Kaj?! That little blue eyed brat?!"

"NRAURGH!!" Kaj's nails turned into tallons. He struck her with the sword, sending her tumbled across the water. As Envi readied herself, Kaj shouted for her not to. "I'll kill you for what you did to me!!" Her Sword of The Fallen appeared in her hands. The two forces met, the metal and ice scraping against eachother. Sparks flew.

"What about what you did to me?!" Donovan snarled, his blue eyes ablaze. "All for a little Vampiran child?!"

"The last time we fought..." Kaj smiled, showing off her fangs. "I was sure I blew a hole in your chest." Her hands gripped the sword tightly. "IGNITIUS!!!" Fire exploded over both of them.

"The last time... You took my eye, and I see you're sporting it quite well." Donovan pointed to his left eye, indicating her left eye.

"Yeah. Musta hurt like a dog." Kaj put her sword down. She came at him, running on the balls of her feet. She struck upward, cutting deeply into his chest. As his crimson blood was spilt, a gust of wind threw her against the wall.

A woman dressed in white and silver looked at Donovan. "Really Donnie." she sighed. "Still moaning over spilt milk. Roy wants you back Now." She looked over at Kaj. "This body suits you better, Kaj." the ivoryblonde scoffed, "Now you look just as ugly on the outside as you do on the inside."

Kaj stood up, readying her sword again. "You always were jealous, Isabella." Kaj bent her legs slightly, ready to run and strike again.

"My name's Riza." said the woman. She ran her fingers through her waistlength white hair. Donovan engulfed himself in a water bubble and teleported away. A cyclone of wind and water covered Riza as she left. "Nice to see you again... Kaj Howlett."

\*\*\*

1516~~?

In a tropical paradise, palm trees, sand, and sun. But things aren't always 'Sunny' in paradise.

~~

The 13 year old's hands were bloodied from her encounter with the boar. The damn thing was seven times her size, yet it saw her as a threat. The island girl checked her torn side, the blood was still gushing out. "I cannot die... Not yet..."

Her feet sunk into the mud, and she slipped down the hill. Anu tried to steady herself, but her injury cause her left leg to spasm. She tumbled down the slope, and fell into a pond. Anu lay face down in the shallow water for a moment, resting for a few seconds. But was brought back at the thought of him. And if he died... because she was too weak, again. Anu grit her teeth and stood up. She made her way through the mud and water to the opening of the cave at the base of the mountain.

Her beaded skirt stuck to her with claylike mud, boar saliva, and even her own blood. But she didn't care, it would be worth it in the end.

"What is it you desire?" asked the spirit of the cave.

Anu found her voice, and spoke. "An antidote... for the one I love..." Her hands held her side, trying desperately to stop the bleeding. "He was bitten by a red Viper."

"The answer you seek is inside." Roots reached off the walls of the cave. They reached into the back of the cave, where Anu couldn't see, and pulled something out. A clay jar, small and delicate, was held out to her. Anu held it, then took off the small lid. A white orchid with pink insides, was floating in the jar, surrounded by water.

Anu bowed to the Sprite, the left. Her body rejected her commands for movement, and she immediately fell to her knees in the mud. She put the jar down gently. Anu dug her hands in the mud, pulling up handfuls of the darkened thick earth until she found it. The grey sand like clay underneath. Anu dug her nails into it, and rubbed it on the open wound.

"I will not let you die Bacu..." She grit her teeth as the pain shot up her back to the center of her skull. The pain dulled and she stood up. 'I was being selfish.' Anu saw the large jackfruit trees ahead. Just beyond that forest were the rice terraces, then the village. She began running when she heard the animal again.

The boar bellowed at her, as it rammed her body head on. Anu tucked the jar into her shirt, and fastened it so the object wouldn't slip. Its tusks drove into her leg, tearing upward to her hip. The girl was thrown upward, screaming in agony. Anu fell to the Earth, only to be gorged again by the animal. She drew a dagger from her belt and cut its eye. The boar staggered back, bellowing and squealing, blood pouring from its eye.

Anu ran into the forest, the searing pain tearing into her leg and back. She saw the pond again, and realized the animal had disoriented her so much, she was backwards. She saw the hole she had dug earlier, and again tore out a small amount of Earthen clay. Anu pressed it against the side of her leg, doing her best to stop the bleeding. She turned and saw the huge boar stumbling towards her. One eye closed and bloodied, the other desperately looking around for her. It saw her and came at her. Anu hated her age, because she was a girl and only 13, she wasn't old enough to wield a sword. She unsheathed another dagger, and readied herself.

~~~

Eloni worked in one of the terraces. She couldn't bare seeing Bacunawa die. She stood up and stretched for a moment, the rice season would end soon, and the harvest would begin. Eloni knew Anu wouldn't dance, if Bacu wasn't there. Just as she was about to start working again, a voice shouted. A joyous call of voices came.

Three year old Mula ran to her aunt. "Cousin Anu is back! Cousin Anu came back!"

Eloni picked up the girl and ran. When they reached the gates, everyone was surrounding the girl. Eloni pushed past them, to see her daughter. Anu held a bamboo rod, unable to stand on her own. Eloni nearly cried at the sight of her.

"Whe-Where's Manoy?" she whispered. As her uncles offered to carry her, Anu shouted, "Where's Bacunawa?!"

The crowd parted, allowing her to pass. Mula held her hand, guiding her to the house. She threw down

the bamboo rod, and struggled up the ladder to the house structure. Inside, her aunt Kira was trying to make Bacunawa as comfortable as possible. The venom was slowly killing him, and the pain was probably excruciating beyond belief. She fell into a sit next to him. Kira saw the girl, and moved to get closer to her. Anu declined the medical attention and turned to Bacu.

He was struggling to breathe, his face flush with a fever.

"Did you bring the flower?" asked Kira. Anu's hands were on her lap, and she picked the dried mud off her beaded skirt. "Well?"

"No..." she cried. Anu cursed herself for being tired. If she could save him, then she didn't deserve to live either. "I was not strong enough."

Eloni hugged the girl close. "It is all right..." she cooed. "I am sure you did your best."

"My best wasn't good enough!" she sobbed. "It was my fault Bacunawa got hurt! And now it is my fault he is going to die!" She wiped her eyes on the back of her hand. Anu kissed her mother on the cheek. "I want to stay with him... Alone."

Eloni and Kira nodded, and left. Anu looked at the man. 17 years old, with straight black hair, and dark skin like hers. He was tall, and strong, and handsome. But most of all Bacunawa was kind to her, and always protected her. His amber eyes opened to look at her.

"Anu...?" he moaned. "Why are you here?" Bacunawa's hand reached up and touched her face, his thumb wiping away her tears. "Don't cry... You're too pretty..." He saw her torn clothes and bloodied side. "Are you alright?"

'The answer you seek is inside.' the spirit's voice echoed in Anu's mind. A sharp pain made her hand go to her side. Then a thought struck her. What if the spirit did not mean the orchid but...!

Anu stumbled across the room, to where her aunt kept the medicines. She sat next to Bacunawa, a bowl and a knife in hand. She lifted up her shirt and dug out the clay from her wound. The grey substance fell into the bowl. The bleeding had stopped, but Anu needed to bleed. She sunk the knife into her side, her life flowing into the bowl.

"ANURANG!! WHAT ARE YOU DOING?!" shouted Bacunawa. He sat up, and pressed his hands on the gash. "Stop it! Now!"

Her fingers pressed the clay and the blood into a deep crimson color. She took the bowl and tilted it to his lips. "Stop... worrying about... me..." Anu said, out of breath. He took the bowl from her, and drank. "The clay... Should soak up the venom... and my blood... will help heal you..." She looked at him, her golden eyes a glow, and a smile that reached ear to ear. "I love you."

She fell into shock from all the loss, and collapsed across his body.

\*\*\*

Ka-bam!

Ian Night looked out the window. The rain poured in heavy sheets, He was grading papers, scribbling notes here and there, when the memory had just hit him. The vampire sighed. He looked over his books, one last time before shoving them into his desk and leaving. He ran his fingers through his spiky hair, then kept walking down the dimly lit hallway. Lightning and rain... It was raining that day too. The day that most vampires knew about. The day when Earth and Heaven, sealed away The One... Ian pushed the thought out his mind, right now he just wanted to relax.

He stopped in front of Dean Dreamer's office, and without knocking walked in. The woman's chair was facing the window, and her feet were propped up on the sill. The lights were off, so not to cause a power outage. Purple lightning flashed, lighting up the room for a few seconds. "Yes?"

"Why do I get the feeling, you know exactly what's going on around here?" he said, leveled.

"By what do you mean?" she said. Dreamer turned her chair to look at him, a happy smile on her face. "Dear, Mr. Night?"

"Quit playing all these damn games!" he said. Ian was losing his temper. "You play the hero... and keep all these damn secrets! Like your name itself... It isn't your birthname, or even a relatively HUMAN name. In the old language, your name meant 'Purifier' or 'Destroyer'. And now you chose this name. 'Dreamer; The one whose mind creates and keeper of shadows.' "

"An equinox is due this year." she said, changing the subject. "The Heylin Eclipse is going to be at the end of the week... And a red harvest moon after that."

"I'm not done Drea--!" She was gone from her chair. A scythe's blade was at his throat.

"I've kept YOUR secrets from getting out, Night." she said, her voice like a snake. "The only one I let slip was that you're older than you look." Dreamer let go of the scythe and it disappeared in a black and red mist. "What do you want me to do? If I gave you The Jar of Shin, do you think it would help them... or hurt them? Hmm?!" Ian was silent. "That's what I thought."

"Uh-hmm." they turned to see Maniac standing in the doorway. "Am I interrupting anything?"

"No." said Night coldly. "I was just leaving."

\*\*\*

Jazmyn picked up another book, and as she did, her eyes caught something against the wall. "A door?!! Yes!" She laughed as she cleared through the stacks of hardcovers and paperbacks. A door soon stood before her. It was white wood, with a golden lock and knob. There was a window, but the glass was black and not transparent. Jazmyn unlocked the door and cautiously it open.

On the other side was a wide and open space, a field next to a lake. A tree near the shore had a swing, crafted simply from two ropes and a board of wood. On that swing was a figure. A little, pink haired figure.



"M-MeMe?!" Jazmyn tore through the doorway, into the field. "MEME!!!"

The ten year old looked over her shoulder at her. She smiled, and slid off the swing. MeMe took her time to reach Jazmyn, walking slowly, and enjoying the sunlight. A breeze rustled through her sunflower decorated sundress. Jazmyn practically glomped the girl, holding MeMe close, afraid to let go. At least here in her dreams,

"Zizineesama?" asked Miaruko.

nothing could spoil this.

"Yes, Me-chan?" Jazmyn whispered, hugging her closer.

Nothing.

In the happiest voice Jazmyn had ever heard, Miaruko Sol said, "I hate you." MeMe's hands pushed pushed on her chest, pushing her away. "Because." Jazmyn looked at the pink haired girl. Her sundress cut across the chest, her flesh torn jaggedly, and blood gushing out. A happy smile still on her face. "You killed me."

## 17 - Eyes Like Yours

chapter thirteen: Eye like Yours

"This isn't real!" she cried. The girl's body limply fell out he arms. Her neck twisted at an impossible angle. "frack! This is not real!" She screamed. The tattoo on her arm burned. Flames licked at her right slereve, reducing it to nothing. The beautiful Spring scene melted away into a graveyard like area. The ground barren of life, and trees withered and dead. Both tatoood arms burned like hell, fury and sorrow building up in her, Jazmyn Lun screamed.

Seeing his deed as done, the intruder left, just uttering above a whisper, "Shadow of Fear!" Too Bad it was above a whisper.

"You think this is funny, eh?!" her voice snarled. "I know how to find you, you fracking bastard from Hell!!!!" Something told her, that if she fought the intruder in the real world, she wouldn't be able to you Lyra or Roex.

\*\*\*

Jazmyn juttud up on the cot. She glanced around, it was twelve in the afternoon, a whole day later. She pulled up her sleeves, and saw on the areas above her elbows, and around her wrists had tribal like tattooes. She stood up and nearly slipped on the floor. Water. She sqawted down on the floor and inspected the watery footprint.

Her nose tingled. The scent of her Nightmare attacker lingered in the air, and it smelled similar to the water. Jazmyn stood up and took a wiff of the air. His trail wasn't fresh, most likely left the window open to cover his tracks, not to escape.

Running in the rain, Jazmyn was nearly struck by lightning, twice. But she made her way to forest. Why did all the things that attacked them, always retreat to the forest?! The magical coming out of her pours was like fire, her clothes weren't wet at all.

The thunder rolled, sending waves of sound through the young vampire's body. It felt... wonderful. Most people would complain about the rain, the wind and the thunder and lightning, but not Jazmyn. To her, something about storms, made her feel... awakened.

\*\*\*

What was all that about?" asked Envi.

Kaj toweled off her orange and red hair. "We need to kill them... Before the end of the week."

"So we're putting a time limit on kicking their asses?!" Envi cracked her knuckles loudly. "Yeah heh heah! Just tell me how many there are, and I'm there."

"Just three." Kaj pulled the towel off her head. "Those two and another one. He's really tall, and brawny. He controls earth, rock and plantlife."

"So water, wind and earth?" asked Burn. "Where's..." Kaj made sparks jump off her hair to finish drying it off. "You were one of them?!"

"Puh-lease! I died before those crazy bastards even started the stupid group." Kaj said, leaning against the cool tiled wall. The other girls looked at her funny. "Well, since you guys'll find out sooner or later, better sooner than later. I'm a little over 400 years old. My real name is Kaj Howlett, and I'm a Homunuculis."

Elen walked into the pool. "What are you guys doing?"

"Nothing much? And you?" said Chii.

"Bored outta my mind." Elen said, scratching her head. "Sunday afternoon and not a thing to do. I mean, you guys are so bored you're hanging out here at Alejandro's pool." She sat next to Envi and Chii. "Waiting for the boys to come out and play?"

\*\*\*

Burn had seperated from the girls, travelling to Alejandro's library. Get a new start on things, try and find things she hadn't seen before. Her hands combed through the book one more time before setting it on the table and sighing. "Am I fricking missing something?!" she asked loudly.

"An indoor voice." said a voice. Lao Jiang pulled up a chair across from her. "Mind telling me why you're here?"

Burn looked at the boy. "My school has inadequate information on Telekinetics. So I thought I'd try Alejandro's books." She rubbed her eyes. "Damn it all."

Lao was silent, but he still looked at Burn. "Well, telekinetics aren't very common in humans because back when the world was still young, humans began to turn a deaf ear to what nature had to say. So those that do have telepathic powers, have very weak powers or are something other than human." He smiled at her. "Does that help?"

"Not really... I'm a gifted HUMAN... Not a nymph or a demon, and I must say, my powers are rather strong." she said. Her hands lifted the book up again, and she began to read again. She glanced over the book at Lao, and he looked back at her. Burn's cheeks flushed red. Lao held his head hands propped up by his elbows, his blue eyes looking at her read.

"Humans are just descendants of demons and nymphes." said Lao. Burn nearly dropped the book. "That's why most of them walk on hind legs or speak. But their powers are shorted out by mating with different breeds. Sort of like if you have a tabby and you keep breeding it's line 'til it has no more stripes."

"So, somewhere along my family, I'm part Nymph?" asked Burn, more interested.

"Something like that... Maybe like, three generations back?" The bell rang for fifth hour. "If you like, I could tell you more after school."

"Great." Burn smiled.

"Awesome." Lao turned and left, and as he was leaving, he said over his shoulder, "It's a date."

Burn finally dropped the stack of books she was holding, her face red with embarrassment.

"D-d-d-d-d-d-date?" Her hands went up to her face, and she held her cheeks. "Date? Date?" Why the hell was she so bubbly around Lao? Usually, she would twist any boy's mind that would hit on her. But for some reason, she was relaxed when Lao was around. She liked it when he spoke. She liked it when he smiled. She liked it when he touched her--

"Nani~~?!" Her face turned even redder. 'Touch?! TOUCH?!'

"Burn?" Chii stood a few feet away from her. Watching Burn do her silent panic dance. "What are you doing?"

Burn regained her cool. "Nothing." Burn knelt down to pick up the books she dropped. "I just dropped these books... one of them must have hit my foot." She smiled sheepishly.

"Oh... Well it's getting late. Our off hour just ended, so I thought I'd come find you." Christal turned sideways, she sensed something, but kept talking normally. "Here. Let me help you."

"Oh, thanks." Burn replied, sensing it too. Their eyes met for a split second before it came down on them.

\*\*\*

Jazmyn stopped running when she felt like her ribcage would break. She sniffed the air, and found the intruder's scent was strongest here. In the middle of the forest, miles and miles away from school. Tall trees surrounded her, and everything looked the same. A gust of wind blew, the scent was strongest.

"Well looky looky what we got? Eh, Donnie?" shouted a woman's voice. She laughed, then out of nowhere, a blade came out of nowhere, and cut Jazmyn across the stomach. For a second Jazmyn made out the style of weapon. A scythe like blade hooked onto a long thick chain, good for both long distance and short range attacks. "Another Half breed."

"I'll deal with tis one Riza." said a man. "Go and have some fun with Kyle."

"Aye aye sir." Riza said, and rustled through the leaves.

He slipped out the trees, onto the ground a few feet away. "Well nice to see you up and awake,

Jasmina." he said, giving her name a Spanish accent.

"Lyra! Roex!" The swords formed in her hands. "You smell like the idiot who was in my head." she said.

"You look like the girl I was killed over." Donovan countered. "Must be a descendant of the Hoe." He raised a hand above his head. Rain falling from the sky began forming a weapon in his hand. A large trident with a white handle, and the three points sharpened like blades with small hooks on the ends. "Meet the God of the Sea, Poseidan."

Jazmyn laughed, but not a happy, or even a mocking laugh. A laugh... that made his blood curdle. "It he supposed to compensate for soemthing?" Blood seeped out onto her jacket and blouse. Her grip on her swords tightened. They felt so heavy, and the ache in her arms wasn't helping either. One on her index fingers traced her cut and held up the crimson finger. "You've signed your death certificate... Now let's get on with the funeral."

\*\*\*

Burn jumped out of the way from the woman's strike. The chain struck Burn sideways, letting her hear her own ribs pop out of place. She flipped out the way, then somersaulted on the top of a bookcase. "Christal! Where's the damn exit?!"

"Damnit!" Christal shouted. A few explosions later, Chii appeared behind Burn, their backs against eachother. "Every exit here is blocked with tree root and rocks." Christal pulled out a red scroll. "Summoning jutsu! Tora-Koh!" A white tiger bearing the symbol of the leaf village appeared. Ice began forming on the bookcase where his nails dung into the wood.

"Yes, Milady?" it asked.

"Cut through the vines aand get us out of here!" she said.

The huge tiger scooped both girls on it's back, then dove into the ruins. Tora-Koh was fast, the vines and quaking earth beneath his paws froze into ice. Turning sharpening Tora-koh nearly collided with the Earthen wall jutting out the ground. Bounding up to a window, he sent a wave of cold through his path, freezing everything before and after him. The vines froze solid, easy to smash like glass. Tora-Koh bound up to the window, claws ready, when an unseen force knocked him down.

"Not so fast, kitty!" said the white haired woman. Riza readied her chained weapon. "The only way you two are getting out is in body bags!"

h

Burn and Chii looked at Riza. In unison they replied, "frack you dog." The woman became enraged. She threw the cained weapon and it sliced through multiple shelves of books at once. But the tiger, and it's riders disappeared before they fell. Chii pulled Tora-Koh back into the scroll and they seperated.

"I mean, what is up with the white hair?!" Burn laughed loudly.

"Yeah! last time I checked..." Christal chimed in. "Only old hags had whhite hair!"

Riza's face turned red. Those little hellbounds were making fun of her looks?! She looked at her reflection in the iced over floor. She was stunning, beautiful, marvelous! How dare a little wolf puppet and her half psychic friend say anything! About! Her! Looks! Just as Riza was about to look away from the mirror, something came at her.

Squealing and shrieking, a little flying squirrel jumped out of the mirror and clung to her face. Around its little neck was a leafy head band, and tied to its back was a scroll. As Riza tried to wriggle the damned creature from her face, it bit her hand and ran to the back of her head, then down her shirt.

"Eek!" she screamed. "Get it off! Get it off!" The animal ran out her sleeve then back into the mirror. Riza smashed the mirror with a kick, then kept smashing it until it was nothing. As she raised her foot to smash another mirror, an explosion rocked her body, throwing Riza into a wall. When they saw she was down, Burn and Chii ran for the iced over door. They reached out for the door in unison, a force rammed into both of them, sending them into bookcases.

"You shouldn't let little tricks like that get you Isabella." said a man. Chii and Burn looked at the huge man. He was a fucking giant compared to them. And with one leg, had kicked both of them aside. He was taller than Riza, looming over her by almost two feet. "I mean, come on! A squirrel?"

Riza stood up, a river of blood coming from her open back. Her spine and organs were visible due to the amount of flesh she was missing. She breathed heavily, not facing either the man or the girls. Her skin regrew, reaching out like octopus tentacles and pulled her open back closed. "It was a rat!" she cried out. She stretched her arms above her head, a loud crack as her bones realigned themselves. "Pretty smart using that damn thing as a decoy and a weapon." She turned her head to them. Burn and Chii shivered. Part of Riza's face was missing, a huge chunk of her cheek's skin and tissue was burned away. She smiled, showing off her singed gums and teeth.

When she caught her reflection on an ice mirror, she screamed. "Oh you little dogs!" She harshly pulled the chain, and the blade swung around her. She pulled it back, swung it around and lunged out at Burn. She dodged the attack then dove into another aisle. Chii used a smoke bomb to blind the woman, and get away.

"Kyle! Find the wolf! I'm going after the telepath!" Riza cried. Her skin pulled itself together, healing her face, not leaving so much as a scar. "Hellbound hoes."

\*\*\*

Kaj sat on the windowsill, she skipped class because she couldn't think straight. Donovan, The Shadow of Fear, Logan, and they were just all coming back now? Of all times? She rubbed her head, trying to remember the last decade of her life. It was all normal, like a human's life. It was only two years ago that she remembered her life in the 1600s. But it was still pretty blurry, like someone had put a film over it. Nothing was clear, everything was mixed up, not in chronological order. She looked inside the room, the gymnasium floor was two stories down, and yet she loved this window in all the school. It was the best view of the sunset, which was especially amazing today.

The thick sheets of rain from this morning were now a fog that clung to the air, giving it a heavy, moist texture. The sky looked as though it were a water color painting and the colors began to run off the

canvas. Shades of red dipped into pink, then purple then mauve blue that was splattered with stars. She smiled, then leaved back. She fell then pushed off the wall into a somersault. Kaj stuck her landing, and heard a slow and loud applause.

Kaj turned to face her intruder, a fireball ready in her hand. It died when she saw who her intruder was. He ran across the wooden floor and came at her. His sapphire eyes burning with hatred, he kneed Kaj in her stomach. She went forward, in both shock and pain and he brought a fist down on the center of her back. Her hands went out in front of her, and Kaj flipped to get him in a triangle hold. She fell, he had somehow dodged her. Her ribs broke before she realized what was happening. Kaj fell to her knees, a searing pain filling her chest and stomach. He stepped on her back, gently pushing her into the wooden floor. It cracked when he kicked Kaj into the floor.

"You...?!" she breathed. "Why?!" He moved his leg, and from the corner of her eye saw red electricity jump from his hands. "Why?!!"

"Because," he replied. Logan's hands raised, then he threw the power into Kaj's back. "RED LIGHTNING STRIKE!!!!" She screamed out painfully, the electricity hurting more than any fire, gun, or knife had. The lightning died, and Logan stepped over her unconscious body. He grit his teeth at the thought, letting her live! But he had his orders, drag out this fight as long as possible, until the end of the week. "Because." He repeated, ruffling his crimson and orange hair, smiling a devious smile. "Just because Mother."

\*\*\*

Elen was still walking around Alejandro, bored as ever, she decided to find Vee and go exploring with him. There was a crowd of students and teachers, murmuring and blocking the path ahead. Elen wanted to see what all the hubbub was about, so she weaved her way into the crowd. Daisy saw her and tried to block her.

"What is it, Daisy?" Elen asked, confused at the vampire's actions.

"You don't want to see it." she replied, her voice nervous and low.

"Oh come on what could possibly--" She saw a blood covered monogrammed jacket. The initials were a double V. "Oh God no!" She pushed past them, she screamed when she saw him. It was Vee, the mauve haired Vampire-demon who loved to bug the hell out of Ellie, lying in a pool of his own blood. Dead.

Elen pushed them away and pulled Vee's limp body into her lap. She patted his cheek gently.

"Come on... quit playing you goofball!" she murmured. "This isn't funny! Come... Come on... Vee! Say something! Anything! I'll let you spill tea all over my homework! just please!! Wake up!"

"Miss... He's... gone..." said a teacher. She gently pried Elen from Vee, and some students loaded him onto a carrier and took him into the infirmary.. She sat on the floor, her white blouse covered in blood. She looked at the ceiling, her eyes blurred with tears. It echoed in her mind again. 'Miss... He's... gone... gone... gone... gone... gone'

Her head went down, her scarlet bangs falling into her eyes. "Who... The frack... did this?" she asked, fire forming around her hands. Whoever it was, his world was about to turn into a living hell or be sent there in pieces.

\*\*\*

Donovan couldn't believe the hellbound halfbreed was keeping up with his moves. Trained on days on end, a body made from the best human parts. And he could control everything around them due to the rain, mist and fog. His fist clenched, commanding the fog around Jazmyn to turn into icicles. Like daggers they drove into her arms, cutting and slicing her up. She used her swords to deflect most of them but a handful got past her defenses, and stabbed into her skin. The cold temperatures felt like her skin was on fire, burning and stinging the entire time.

The ice and blood turned into a red vapor, blocking her vision when she went for an attack. Donovan's magical entity was blocked due to the amount of Jazmyn's blood floating around.

"Peek-a-boo!" His trident side swiped her. She blocked with Lyra and Roex, but something unimaginable happened. They broke.

\*\*\*

Chi ran atop the bookcases as the ground beneath them ruptured and they disappeared into the basement. Out of nowhere a gale of wind knocked her off the wood, sending her to the ground. The earth turned to mud, then began sucking Chi in. It turned hard when she was totally submerged. Kyle smiled happily.

"One down... One to--" The floor exploded and the young ninja jumped out the floor.

"Hai tousen!" She threw thousands of spinning blades. Riza sent them back at her. Using her chakra strings, Chii was able to pull them back, all of them coming back to her hands. They stopped spinning and Kyle and Riza saw they weren't actually shuriken, but metal fans. Chii sent one out and brought it back, like she was playing with a yo-yo.

"Can't use pinwheels against the Goddess of winds, Sweetie." Riza moved her hands and the winds bounced off the walls, each time getting faster and faster. Books, debris, and ice flew everywhere. "Ha ha ha! Try using your little toys when you're dead! Wolf!" Her laughter was stopped when she saw Chii using a barrier in the eye of the storm. Riza growled, she pulled her blade in and went for a close range kill. When Riza brought the blade down on her head, Chii disappeared in a puff of smoke.

'A shadow clone?!' Riza realized with her diving at her target like that, she left herself wide open for a --

"Trap." said Chii. The chakra strings tightened around Riza's body, causing her to drop the dagger. The ninja stood on Riza's back, her feet pressing on her so her face went vertically up. "I'm going to be the wife of the Kazekage!!" she snapped. "So what makes you think a little pinwheel BLOWER like you scares me?" She pulled on the chakra strings, it tightened around Riza, sinking into her skin. She felt pain as the ninja began sucking out her energy. "This is my 'Spider no jutsu' technique..." Riza looked at her in horror. Christal Uchiha-Hyuga smiled, showing off her wolfen fangs. "It's a jutsu of my own



creation."

Riza grew older and older, then with one last tug, was nothing but dust. Christal fell off the mountainous bookcase and to the ground. Even if she sucked the wind-dog's life out, it wasn't nearly enough chakra to sustain her. As Chi began to stand up, a tangle of roots wrapped around her and pinned her against a wall. Her back hit the stone wall, cracking her pelvic bone and dislocating her right shoulder. Burn was a few feet away, pinned to the wall to.

Kyle's furious green eyes met Chi's silvery hues. "You little whore!!" he snarled. The vines tightened around both of them. "I'm going to kill you so slowly a firing squad would seem like tickling."

"Kazebame!" Blue butterflies swerved around his, setting off small explosions.

"shoot!" He held his empty eye and blood gushed out. "dog!" A huge animal tackled him, sending him into the ground. It's antlers drove into his arms, then threw him into a bookcase.

A little figure flew off the animal's back and to where Chi and Burn were held. Burn lifted her head weakly. "Ti... Tita?"

"Yes?" she said, trying to pull the roots off, but falling due to her stature. "I'm not Tita... I'm Jessamine..." she gave the roots another tug. "Anu! I can't do it!"

'Busy now!' Roared the antlered beast. It's jaws clamped down on Kyle's shoulder. 'Can't help! Get souls before death! Only way to save friends!'

Kyle looked at the little girl trying to free his hostages. How the hell had she gotten in?! His fists clenched and the vines and roots tightened on their bodies. Chi and Burn screamed out. They screamed even louder when the roots impaled their skin and sunk inbetween their ribs.

"no!" Jessamine tried to tear the roots off, but they whipped her, causing her to fall back on the ground. "Damn it! Libro de Libre." A book appeared in the girl's hand. So did a feather pen. Jessamine dipped it in Chi's blood then handed it to her. "Please! before it's too late! Write your name!"

Weakly, Chii wrote her name in the book. The blood soaked in, turned black then was gone. She did the same for Burn. The girl wrote her full name, her eyes blurred over with tears and blood. "Burnidette Dawnya Lynn." Jessamine closed the book. "I'm not strong enough to get the trees off... but this is the only way I could save you." Neither girl said anything. Their blank eyes just looked at her. Jessamine climbed on the vines and closed their eyes. "You fought well... Now rest."

## 18 - Belly of the Beast

### episode fourteen: Belly of the Beast

Jessamine turned around and shouted for Anu. The beast let go of Kyle, and went for her. Anu tilted her head, so Jessie could grab onto her antlers and climb onto her back. The two disappeared into the darkness. Kyle returned to his hostages, he snorted in disgust. He reached in his coat and pulled out a gautlette. Hoping to gather at least their souls, only to find they were already gone. They were useless now, the only thing their bodies were good for were warning signs, like that little demon-vampire boy.

The roots loosened, and the girls' bodies dropped to the floor. As he began to walk away, a noise made him stop. Kyle turned to see a woman sitting on a bookcase, snickering at him.

"Ello, ello ello. What do we have 'ere?" she spoke with an British accent. Then her voice changed, disguarding the accent. "That was quite a nasty way to deal with those two. Wouldn't you agree, Neechan?" She looked behind him, at another woman, dressed in a black kimono

Kyle looked over his shoulder. The woman rolled her eyes. She held a silver fan, made of wavy daggers. Each dagger was eight inches long, and shown with much radiance. A chain went from a ring in the handle to three metal bracelets around her wrist. "Indeed, Sashi-neechnan."

'Sashi-neechnan?!' Kyle turned back to the other woman. She smiled at him, her crimson-violet eyes a glow. The to Burn who was laying lifeless on the ground. "You're a--!"

"That's right!" The woman laughed. She brushed her blonde and purple hair away from her face. "ATTACK MY PRETTIES!!" Running out from the dark corners of the library, and under the broken floor, small green structures came at Kyle. Their small claws tearing his skin, and clothes. She laughed so hard, she nearly fell off the bookcase.

"Sashi-neechnan! I want to have some fun too!" cried the other one, her voice hinting a little whine.

"Go ahead, Katchina." Sashi clicked her fingers and the smash green creatures pulled off Kyle and ran back to the shadows.

"Yay." The other woman stood up, her chained fan in her hands. "Kibabotsu!" The fan grew until it's size rivalled it's master. She gently pushed it and it closed to form a giant sword, the was only a few inches taller then her. Her foot pushed the weapon off the shelf, gripped the handle and hoisted it on her left shoulder. She jumped off the bookcase and came at him. The fan opened. "Kiba giri!!"

Kyle jumped out the way, and somersaulted to a stop. "Missed me!"

Katchana giggled. "Did I now?" She held up her hand to show it was covered with blood.

'What?!' Kyle looked at the ground, and noticed a trail of blood leading from her to him. 'With that

massive a weapon?! Why didn't I---?!! "GLAURGH!!!" A spray off his life covered the area around his legs. One of which he didn't have anymore. His blood searched out for the body part, only to be stop when she threw paper charms. The blood ignited in a red and orange blaze. Sashi clicked her fingers, and the small green critters came out. "Get away you demons!!" He used the rocks to smash and kill the little green things, but there were too many. He was lost in a sea of green, red and needles.

"They ain't demons." Sashi smiled. "They be cactuses."

"Hey," Katchina said. "We better go back... I here someone coming."

Sashi jumped off the bookcase and dusted off her white kimono. "Yeah. I guess you're right." Her long bushy tail swayed with disappointment. "I thought I could see him again..." She stretched her arms above her head. "Let's go before a teacher sees this mess."

Sashi's body turned into a vapor then disappeared completely. Soon after Katchina followed her example and was gone. Chii's eyes swung open and she gasped for air. Her vision cleared to see the library in ruins, and a corpse on the ground. She felt woozy, like her head was going to drip onto the floor, in masses of jello. The door was torn off it's hinges as a group of students and teachers came in.

Burn coughed, thing layer of dirt on her flew into small clouds. She curled her body inward, a small stabbing pain in her stomach making her moan. Burn and Chii were carried to the infirmary, in no condition to walk.

\*\*\*

Elen had her head on his cot. Looking at him her eyes tired and angry. She folded her arms and fell asleep there, next to her best friend... or the last time... or so she thought.

\*\*\*

a few hous later...

"Patty-cake! Patty-cake! Baker's man! Bake me a cake as fast as you can! Roll it! and pat! and mark it with an E and put it in the oven for Ellie and me!" two voices said in unison. Elen thought she was dreaming, so she rolled over a little. "...psst!...psst!!.... PSSST!!!...." Something blew in her ear, and she sat up quickly. "BONK!!" The side of Elen's head had crashed against someone's chin.

"Kya!" Elen rubbed her head tenderly. "What the..." The two looked at Elen. "Hell?" A little girl sat on the bed holding her mouth, and Vee was laughing his @\$ off.

"That's not funny Niichan!!" cried the little girl. She moved her hands to reveal her busted lip. Blood dripped onto the blanket. "Great! I'm bleeding!!"

"Well the look Ellie got when she woke up... She looked like a zombie..." Vee mimicked the face she had, eyes half open and mouth a gape by an inch or two. "Then waking up to a 'bonk'." He made another face, then laughed.

"Ooh!" The little girl slid off the cot and ran to the tissue box. Elen was still stunned. Vee was alive?! How

could this be? Elen blinked, pinched herself, then pinched Vee. He gave a surprised yelp, then swatted her hand away. Elen looked at the girl. She was skinny, and short, possibly only five or six years old. She had tan skin and silver eyes with a rim of blue. "Jessie's going to be mad I stayed so long..." The girl dabbed her busted lip with tissue. "My name's Maya-Tibon by the way. But everyone calls me Pipit."

Pipit dusted off her brown skirt, the bead rustled. Elen noticed she wasn't dressed in normal little kid attire, but clothes that would have been worn during the feudal times in Asia. The shoulders were bare, except for one strap on her left shoulder. The sleeves were long and flared out at the wrists like feathers, and the shirt itself almost reached her knees. Under the shirt was a pair of tan shorts, much lighter than her brown shirt. Pipit wore a blue hair clip on the right side of her head to keep her hair out of her face, so only one eye was visible.

The bleeding had stopped so she tossed the tissue. "I have to go now... but before I do..." Pipit reached in her large sleeves and pulled out a book as big as Elen's head. "If You could sign right here..." She pointed to a blank spot on a page filled with names. "I'll be on my way."

Elen looked at the list of names. "What am I signing for?" asked Elen, looking at the girl with caution.

"I'm not at liberty to reveal that information." said Pipit, ruffling her brown layered hair. "It's best to just sign now... And I'll tell you later."

"Tell me what? Why can't you tell me now?" asked Elen, her voice getting more hostile. "You brought Vee back alive didn't you? But at what cost?!"

Pipit looked at Vee. "No cost." she smiled. "He actually signed yesterday afternoon." Before they found his body. "So his agreement was filed and done."

"What agreement?" Elen pressed.

"Pipit!" snapped a voice. A girl walked into the infirmary, a stern look on her face. "What are you doing?"

"Nothin'." she replied innocently. "Just talkin'."

"Well we only have a few minutes to do this. We still have ten more people to get." said the older girl. Her spiky white hair reached her shoulders. Her eyes were gold, and skin was like Pipit's. She wore a white long sleeve blouse with open wide sleeves and faded-ivy green skirt and stockings. "Good day Miss Elen." She walked over to them and snatched the book from Pipit. "No harm will come to you or your parties in pact with us. We're merely messengers, and this type of thing is a lot safer than most contracts made by humans for insurance." She tilted the book out for her. "Please sign here. Under Miss Burnidette and Miss Christal."

Elen looked at the page. And sure enough, their signatures were there. She gave in. "I don't have a pen." Elen said.

The girl in white waved her hand and a quill pen appeared. "Your hand please." Elen held her hand out, palm down. The girl grabbed her wrist and turned her hand, palm up. She stabbed Elen with the pen in her heel, then held the feathered end out for her to grasp. "Right here."

"Elinah." Her writing flourished, then sunk into the page in black ink.

"Now we're done here." said the girl. "Pleasure doing business with you." She slammed the enormous book closed and pushed it in her sleeve. Elen noticed they both wore a single wing on their right hands. It was black and had a small dragon symbol. She reached down and took the five year old's hand and left. When they were walking down the hall elen heard Pipid cry out, "But I want red hair! Why can't I have red hair?!!"

"Did you see what they were wearing?" asked Elen.

"Yeah. It was cute. The little kid looked like a sparrow or something." Vee pulled up the sheets to his neck. "Get out... I still have half a sick day and I want to sleep."

"Do you even know what we signed?!" asked Elen, turning to him, her green eye showing a little fear. "What if they were demons! Here to steal our souls?!!"

Vee groaned and pulled the blanket over his head. "They're sprites." Vee responded. "I didn't sense anything dark in them..." vee sat up suddenly. "Wait there was one thing that got my attention!"

Elen looked at him, attentive to him. "Really? What?!"

His voice shook a little, his eyes looked at her. Vee was scared. "I mean it really blew my mind, Ellie!... She must really be evil.. because she said..."

"Yes?! What did she say?!"

"she said..." Vee turned to her, his voice shaking. "She said...She said you were pretty." Elen blinked, dazed at the answer. Vee burst into laughed, holding his ribs to keep them together. She grew angry them smacked him upside the head. "Owch! Patient in the infirmary! Hello!!"

\*\*\*

Pipit skipped down the hall way, Jessamine followed her at a slow pace. Walking past them was a red head with pail, white skin and stitch-scars. She glanced at them from the corner of her mitchmatch eyes. Her foot came up, nearly striking the girl in white and green in the face. The girl somersaulted backwards, then landed in a calm and still manner. Jessamine fixed her skirt and looked at her. "So you won't sign unless we fight?"

"Wouldn't have it any other way, Jess." Kaj replied, pushing her thick bangs away from her eyes. "It'd look odd for me, an almost full grown woman, fighting a little kid."

"You're right." smiled Jessamine. Her large white sleeves covered her face as she laughed. "Maybe I should be wearing a blindfold."

"Still a haughty little brat, eh?" Kaj came at the girl. Her foot nearly striking Jessie in the ribs. The girl kept dodging, completely avoiding Kaj.

"I won't fight you." she replied. "It's against the rules."

"Screw the rules!" Her hair waved in the low gust of wind coming from the open window. She did realize Jessie had moved, and had two fingers pointed at her throat.

"You're hurt... and the pain has made you too disoriented for a fight with me." she smiled. Jessie reached in her sleeve, and pulled out the large book. Kaj eased up and ran her hand through her short hair. "Last time. Promise."

"God...What a pain." Kaj took the quill pen, cut her hand and wrote in her blood. "Do you have any information on why those damn elementals are here?"

"Two have been taken care of, accordingly by Fox and Wolf." said Jessie, closing the book. It disappeared in a puff of smoke, then a letter appeared in her hands. "And this letter came from Konoha... It's for Miss Chrystal."

\*\*\*

Chrystal looked over the letter one last time. It was from Hyuuga Kiyotomaru, her father. 'You have disgraced our family for the last time. We strip you of the name Hyuuga. You may do as you wish about the matter, but know this, you are no longer my daughter.'

She crumpled the letter. "S'not like I was to begin with." she gave a short pained laugh. When she was seven... that's when Kiyotomaru found her wounded in the woods near Konoha. The seal of the sky(A black rimmed butterfly with rainbow wings and two small crescents under the wings) on her back, and eyes like no one had ever seen. As pale as the blue moon, but a little darker than the Byakugan. They assumed she was from some branch of the Hyuuga clan. Come to find out, years later that her real name was Chrystal Marie Polhikw'mana. She tried to remember her family.

"Fine... 'Disgrace'... 'Disappoint'... I was never going to be head of the family, so why didn't he brand me? Like Kokorro? Or Tamachi?" She ruffled her black layered hair, frustrated with the lack of answers she was getting.

'He was afraid.' said a voice.

Chii looked around and saw no one. "Who said that?" she asked out loud. She looked over at Burn's cot, she was asleep, exhausted with the fight with Riza, the wind demon. "Hello---?"

'you don't need to speak, just listen.' said the voice again.

"What do you mean?" Chii asked one last time, before the silence was broken by two shouting people, a boy and a girl.

"I said get off!" said the girl.

"calm down already!" hissed the boy, "You're going to wake them up!"

"Don't touch me you pervert!" The girl shrieked. "RAPE!!"

"OW!! WTF?!! DID YOU JUST BITE ME?!!" Christal recognized both of them . Chase and Jazmyn? Why would they be here?

"Yes I did!" Jazmyn laughed haughtily. "Want me to demonstrate?!"

The white screen seperating the beds was moved by Ryota, Jazmyn was pinned on the cot by Chase, blood dripping from his neck. "This is neither the time nor the place for you two to be doing Hanky-Panky." she said, her eyes half open. "You," she pointed to Chase. "Stop trying to seduce my patients. And you," she pointed to Jazmyn, "Stop trying to steal blood from your lover. Vampire pacts state you can't do that 'til you're ready to mate."

When Jazmyn's face turned crimson, Chase gave her a triumphant smile, then climbed off her. "See ya."

"I should file statutory rape charges!" she snarled, baring her fangs, the blood making her more hostile than she needed.

"What?" Chase looked over his shoulder at her. "You're the one who bit her 'Lovverrrr'." He rolled the Rs, like the way someone pronounced Burro in Spanish. "Like I said. See ya." He left.

"frack you!" she shouted.

"Maybe next time!" he laughed through the door.

"There was no need for such language." said Ryota. She gave Jazmyn a stern, angry look. "In here again I see. What happened this time? Another fight with Chase? Or perhaps Night?" She sighed, her brown hair falling in her face. "Let's look at the X-ray shall we?" Ryota pulled out a black sheet and clipped it to a light up board. "HOLY CRAP!!" Ryota looked at the chart closely. "How many fights have you gotten into?!!"

"A few. Nothing too serious." Jazmyn replied, using the back of her hand to wipe her mouth.

"This shows multiple damage to your ribs, collar bone, shoulder and pelvic area. Broken then healed over the years." Ryota looked at her. "Years honey."

"This is the first time I've actually broken bones Miss Ryota." Jazmyn replied. "The first time in a while I've gotten that thrill of--"

"Well that thrill can get you and your friends seriously hurt. Maybe even killed. You Asians and fighting..."

"What did you say?" asked Jazmyn, her pointed ears perking up.

"You could get hurt really--"

"No the other thing! How do you know I'm asian?" Jazmyn tried to move, but a stabbing pain in her arm made her stop.

Ryota shuffled through her folders and found a book on The Islands of Asia and the Pacific. She flipped it open to a section on Malaysia and Laos. "Doesn't this look like you?"

A girl wearing shorts and a pink tank was in the picture. Her hair was long and black, braided back almost reaching her knees. Her skin was a lighter than Jazmyn's, but the face was of similar build. Next to her was a waterbuffalo, and two smaller children. "Little bit." She flipped the page, and she saw rice terraces and houses on stilt like structures. They seemed eerily familiar. Jazmyn turned to a section on a place called the 'Philippines'. There were more houses on stilt like structures, and rice terraces. People road bikes, and small cars. The style of clothing and decorum was a mixture of many things, Chinese, Malaysian, Laos, and Spanish.

"This one." Jazmyn held up the book to show a girl around her age, standing knee deep in a river. A large straw hat pulled and resting on the back of her neck to show her face. Sure enough, she looked exactly like Jazmyn, but her skin was a lighter shade of tan and her eyes weren't golden. "But I could be anything! Hawaiian, Arabic, Cherokee, Laos..." She let out an exhausted sigh. "Anyth--" A page on weapons caught her eye. A sword and a dagger, the sword much to the style of Lyra and Roex. 'Espada y Daga- The two handed technique of fighting with a sword and a dagger. Many other styles include, hand to handle, sword and sword or with battle sticks. Stiff bambo structures used when sparing.' She looked at the picture again. Now she was sure; that is what Lyra amd Roex were. Espada y Espada.

\*\*\*

Christal saw in her mind, a clan of people... No... clan wasn't right... A tribe. She watched them, gathered around a large fire, talking and laughing. Two large wolves sat at the feet of a little girl. The little girl yawned loudly and snuggled closer to the black on, her head almost disappearing in the sea of onyx. Chii looked around, then at herself. she was dressed like one of the elders sitting close to the fire. the old man put his hand in small deer skin pouch, then threw a handful of metallic colored sand on the fire. It turned purple, and smoke bellowed up, taking on the forms of an Eagle, a Deer and a Wolf. The three symbols of the Maidens of the sky, Sun, Rain and Snow.

"Katchina..." said the elder, motioning to the girl sleeping on the wolf. The animal nuzzled her awake. She sat up, rubbing her eyes. "Come." She walked over to him, and hugged him dearly. Katchina looked him in the eyes. "Danger... is coming to our lands... and there is little we can do about it." He dipped his hand in a mixture of blackberries, burnt oak, and lilacs. He pressed his thumb against her forehead, forming a black crescent moon. "I bless thee in the sign of the Sun, Rain and Snow, Nuvaktsin'mana. May they keep you safe on your journey." The elder motioned the black and silver wolf over to him. "Take care of her." He pressed his head against theirs, symbolizing their closeness.

The little girl began sniffing. "But... I don't want to go... Grandpa..." She rubbed her eyes on her sleeve. "I want to stay and fight... with you and Brother and Sister and Mother and Father... I'm not weak!"

The old man chuckled, then put his hand on her head. "I know, Little one... you've proven that before, time and time again." He kissed her on her forehead, the moon not getting smudged. "Travel swift... Travel free." The black wolf scooped her up and ran. Her silver brother following close behind.



"No! Put me down, Ta'lo!" she shouted, holding onto his fur tightly. Tears blurred her eyes when she no longer saw the campfire. She had lived longer than any normal person, but still looked as young as seven. Now that Grandfather set her on her journey, soon her age would catch with her.

\*\*\*

1520--?

Anu walked up the sloped mountain, traveling up to the entrance of her village. The scar from her encounter with Baboy, the large earth boar from so long ago, was now a faded line on the back of her leg. She fiddled with the pin that held her hair up, the sea shells making a rather pleasant sound. She gently rattled the beaded curtain, trying not to wake him. She held the orchids dearly, her gift dare not get damaged. He yawned, sitting up and stretching.

"Good morning," Anu smiled softly. Bacunawa blinked, a little surprised to see her there. "Happy Birthday Leader."

"Don't call me that." he replied, rubbing the back of his neck. "Just called me Manoy, alright? Just like when we were little?"

"Why? It's your title right?" Anu blushed, she held out the flowers for him. "I picked them this morning... before dawn." "This is wrong. Stop this before you get hurt." Anu motioned her insecurities away, today was the day... She was going to tell him...

Bacunawa got up, and began to get dressed for the day. "Manoy..." she said, her voice shaking. "There's something I've been wanting to tell you... for a long time...I L-"

"Wait. There's something I want to tell you first." A grand smile on his face. She blushed when he knelt in front of her and grasped her hand. "I'm going to the Mainland."

'...what...?' Anu's smile didn't fade, she kept it and laughed. "Really? what for?" she asked with false enthusiasm.

"Studies. They are many things we still don't know about our cousins from the mainland! Think of all the information I could bring back to the Village!" Bacunawa was too happy to notice, Anu's heart was breaking.

She leaned forward and kissed him on the cheek. "Happy Birthday." she murmured, her voice finally breaking. She stood up slowly, and turned out of his house. Anu slowly stalked out the village, then silently ran out into the forest. 'He's leaving?! He's Leaving?!' Her stomach felt like someone kicked the wind out of her, she couldn't think straight. Anu finally slowed down and fell to her knees. Her hands dug into the dirt, her face down she began crying.

She loved him so much. All these years she had watched him grow from a boy who she fought with all the time, to her best friend, to her guardian. Why did she assume he could be her lover?! Anu rubbed her eyes, cursing herself for being like this. Wanting what she could never in her life have. There were

many other men, from other Villages or cities, yet she wanted Bacunawa. Just him. No one else. She thought about going to the mainland with him, but remembered she spoke three languages, two of which she spoke horribly. And with the little money Anu had, how could she pay to go? It cost gold, and silver to cross the ocean on merchant boats alone, and all she had were pesos.

That time they nearly died, when she said she loved him, Bacu assumed she meant like a younger sister loves her brother... but she didn't. Father had left when she was young... And now Bacunawa?! A few hours later, after Anu had enough time to calm herself down, she began to walk back. If Bacunawa was leaving, who would be the next chief? Surely it would be one of her cousins, they were older and knew more about the trade, and the seasons, and the people from the land called 'España'.

But, what if he did name her the next chief? A silent wave of panic swept over her. Anu was she sure couldn't handle it. She'd help him, following Bacu around like a little duck and parent. Handling matters with other tribes or family members was easy that way, because... Anu shrugged off that thought too. She wanted to be happy for him. If Bacunawa wanted to be happy, why not let him?

\*\*\*

Burn was up and about, quicker than she thought. A whole week ahead of what she had estimated. Even if she was a Gifted Human, a fight like the one she and Christal had fought would have taken a week, 2 at most, to heal. But as it was, she was up and at 'em in two days. Her bandaged ribs, and shoulder stung a little bit, but Burn was able to cope.

She looked outside and saw a flock of bird fly by. She walked closer to the window and looked at them. Her orange eyes stung, the light hurting more than she expected. "...ow..." Burn murmured.

"what is it?" asked Ryota from her desk.

"My eye... it hurts..." Burn held her left eye, the stinging pain not subsiding.

"Probably just a damaged vessel." Ryota stood up and went through the cabinet above her head. She fished through a box of kneewraps, then shin splints until she found what she was looking for. "Here. Where this eyepatch until the end of the week. If it doesn't stop hurting by then, come back and I'll see what I can do."

Burn walked over to a mirror and put it on. She liked it. The eyepatch made her look more of a threat. If people asked, she would freak them out saying it was gouged out by a demon. She made a funny face at the mirror, sticking out her tongue and holding up a hand in a V as in victory. Burn yelped when she remembered her day. Lao! She had missed their date!!

"Omobakka hiei!!" she shouted. She had missed it by a good, what, three days? Would he be mad? Would he even forgive her?? What if--

"Before if forget Miss Burnidette..." Ryota held out three flowers tied with a ribbon and a note. "A young man came and delivered this." Burn looked at it, then gently took it in her hand. She grinned when she read the note. It was so simple, yet it made her heart jump. 'I see this rose has thorns. Get well soon, Lao.'

"Thank you." Burn straightened out her uniform and left for class. Dean Dreamer and Night were watching silently. Dreamer was smiling a sweet smile, innocent like one of her students.

"You're having fun aren't you?" asked Night, a hint of annoyance in his voice.

Her bright green eyes flashed crimson for a second. "Lots."

## 19 - ZIM ZAM ZOOM! a girl falls from the sky

### episode fifteen: Zim Zam Zoom! A girl falls from the sky.

Invidia ran her fingers through her lime green hair. She was furious at what those Verve doges had said. 'Ew! Your head looks like a fungus!' 'Green? It must be an infection!' She pulled out the chair and sat down. She crack her digits loudly, then began to play. Her hands went across the keys quickly, music sprouting from the mass of strings, wood and metal. When Envi closed her eyes, she could sometimes see the music itself. Even if she disliked it, sometimes, aside from fighting with words, or fists, music was a way to vent. Envi finished her piece minutes later, and her hands stopped. The door opened, and Jazmyn looked at her.

"That was really good." Jazmyn said, standing in the doorway still. "Mind if i listen?"

Envi smiled. "Sure. I was just venting. I don't get it. We're just as strong as those Verve doges." Jazmyn walked across the room and sat next to Envi on the bench. "They don't even see us as equals. Why do they hate us?!"

Jazmyn shrugged. "Probably the same reason some Catholics believe their religion is the only right way." Her hands went out, and gently touched the keys, in no specific order. "But... they were taught to hate us. And are cowards to their fears of the unknown."

"Well, they should fear us! And give us respect!!" Envi laughed triumphantly.

"You've been hanging around Zim too much." Jazmyn's hands went to her lap, where she held two plush dolls.

"You play piano?" asked Envi. Jazmyn shook her head. She saw the little dolls Jazmyn held. "You miss her... don't you?"

She held up one of the dolls. Chibi-ized version of the well loved and cutie-pie Miaruko Sol. Little button eyes, and hair made of pink synthetic hair. Clothes made of pink and white cotton scraps. "Can you believe she made them? Meme couldn't put a thread through a needle's eye if her life depended on it." She held up the other doll. A chibi version of Jazmyn. She put the two dolls next to eachother, and their hands clicked together. The two dolls looked even cuter, hugging eachother like they'd never be seperated.

\*\*\*

'You have a very pretty face.' she said, pushing her sister's bangs from her face. 'Why are you hiding it?'

'Why do you care?' The older girl replied, swatting her hand away. 'I need to study. Buzz off.'

'But Zizi-neesama! How can you see with all this hair in your eyes?' asked Miaruko. She got an idea. Miaruko jumped off the chair and ran to her dresser. She shuffled through her jewelry box, then found

what she was looking for. 'Tada~!'

Two small green hair clips, with glitter made into them.

'Little Dinky paperclips?' asked Jazmyn, closing her mathbook. 'What am i going to do with those?'

'THIS!!' Miaruko bounced around like a fairy, then sat on the desktop. She pulled the bangs out of Jazmyn's eyes and pinned them to the sides. 'Now you look beautifuls!'

'.....' Jazmyn looked at herself in the mirror. Her amber-brown eyes shown brightly contrasted against her tanskin. The little girl smiled, expecting Jazmyn to say something. Her hands began to pull them out. 'These are too small for me. They were made for a five year old Meme.'

'oh...' She said. Her head drooped a little. '...Wait! I have others!!!!' Miaruko fumbled across the room again, and grabbed her little jewelry box. She held out to pair of larger hair clips, one pair blue, the other ones white. 'These look big enough.' Miaruko fixed Jazmyn's hair, then pointed her head towards the mirror again. 'Keep them... as a gift.'

\*\*\*

Kaj slept with her head on the desk, listening to her teacher drone on about ectoplasm. It's not like she would use this in the real world. Now if the teacher she would rather be killing Donovan... or finding a way to sever the ties between him and Logan. The bell rang and class was over. Kaj took a deep breath. She thought over her next moves. He knew where she was, and knew what she looked like.

As she was walking, something exploded behind her. The glass from the windows rained on the girls. Kaj sensed him, and tensed. Bastard was bold. Didn't even wait for nightfall to attack.

Donovan smiled over the damage. A few girls stumbled to the infirmary, others ran back to the safety of their classrooms. "Well Ragdoll, let's start where we left off, shall we?"

Kaj's hands glowed with crimson and amber flames. "Let's."

\*\*\*

Friday~~1:51 p.m.  
Combat 101

Night read off the names for attendance. "Kajinyo?" He looked around the room, suprised to see the firedemon wasn't in class. "Elen, do you know where Kaj is today?"

Elen shrugged, "I haven't seen her since breakfast."

"Well, today, we'll be working with Contract Weapons." He looked at Jazmyn. "Care to demonstrate, Miss Lun?"

She silently replied no, then put her head down on her desk. "Nothing to be modest about, everyone's seen you fancy duel swords at work."

She blinked slowly, then cast him a look. "I'm tired."

"All right." he pointed to Chii. "You're at level, Chrystal. Mind coming up?" She nodded and stood up. "To speed things along, I'm going to write a symbol on your dominant hand." Chii held out her right hand, and Mr. Night wrote with a washable marker on her palm. "This is a beginner Contract." Chrystal held up her hand for the class to see. A penacle star, enclosed by a pentagon, and a small crescent moon in the center. "This allows you to summon any weapon, that you have come in contact you. Like a simple sword, dagger, knife... this mirrors the Summoning Jutsu most Ninjas learn. But instead of using a scroll, you'll use symbols and small charms."

Danica raised her hand. "Like Alchemy?"

"Yeah, pretty close to Alchemy." Mr. Night clicked the marker closed. "Now this is the hard part. Your weapon under contract actually has a predestined name. And only you can actually say it. Saying the name of the weapon, validates the contract, and allows it to be born." He stepped back a few feet from Chii.

Chrystal closed her eyes and took a deep breath. "Kibabotsu." The symbol glowed on her hand. The lines broke and fell off her hand, like sakura petals, they swirled around her hands. The petals turned into a bracelet. The bracelet then snaked and grew into a chain that reached out in the air. From the end of the chain was a blade. A giant fan, made of wavy metalswords, the height of Kibatsu well over Chrystal.

Night looked shocked. He grinned at her, then patted Chrystal on the back. "Good job." She sat down in her desk, sending Kibabotsu away. The only thing that was left were the thin metal bracelets around her right wrist. He went on lecturing the history of Summoning weapons and it's branching off into such teachings as Summoning Jutsu and Alchemy. 'How could they be at this level by now? Surpassing the Contract of Litrals, to an Oral Contract...' The bell rang. "And remember at exactly eight o'clock tomorrow morning to Sunday morning will be the Milinium Eclipse. It's something that everyone of you should see, at least once in your life times."

\*\*\*

"Draconius des Ignacius!!!!" The fire spiralled out of Kaj's hands and down the hall. The dragon shaped flames crunched down on Donovan arm. Tearing it clean off, the hydrohomoculis screamed in agony. Kaj ran for him, her mismatch eyes ablaze with fury and hatred. "NRRRRRAUGHRRRR!!" She punched him, first with her left, then her right. Donovan laughed at her attempts. His bloodied flesh wrapped around her wrists, pulling her in.

"I'll... absorb your fucking body... and become stronger than all your little hellbound friends... Just like--" Donovan was cut off when Kaj grunted. Her petite black horns, jutted out of her skull, and grew almost as thick as her arms. Like ox horns, or that of a bull. Her red and orange grew longer, covering her eyes.

"Just...like... Logan?!" She roughly pulled out her arms from the other homoculus. Covered in blood, and burned up to her elbows. She grinned at, showing a demonic hatred, like he had never seen. Her hands reached into the gaping cavity of his chest, her clawed hands holding either side of his lower ribs.

KER-RACK!!! Her claws seperated the upper half of Donovan's body from the lower half. Blood sprayed on the walls, and all over Kaj's clothes and body. "And now you have him working for you?!"

Donovan laughed, in a strangled voice. "...We stole... away your Logan.... but....he escaped years ago...."

"Liar!!" Kaj grabbed him by his collar and began choking what little life he had left, out of his torn corpse. "I saw him!! I SAW LOGAN!! And he was wearing a uniform like yours."

Donovan laughed again. "Impossible!.. We would never except a hellbound like--" Kaj's hands tightened around his throat. A sickening crunch came when she broke his neck. She dropped hi body, and looked at her clawed hands, coated thickly with blood. She hadn't had this thrill... in years... no sword, or gun... but with her hands. Even if she was disgusted by Donovan, his blood... smelled delicious. Her tongue ran across her palm, clearing it of the crimson liquid.

"...K-kaj...?" The firedemon turned to the intruders, her back arched and ready to fight. Her eyes widened when she saw them. Burn, Chii, Elen... and Knuckles. She turned to run the other way, but it was blocked. By Jazmyn and Envi. They all must have heard all the commotion... and come to help... Her mind was spinning. Who long had they been there?! When did they even get there?! Oh God! They saw her drink the blood! They saw her break his neck! Kaj felt herself being smothered. Her claws raked across the wall, and she ran through it. Fleeing into the forest, rain heavily pelting her in thick sheets of water.

\*\*\*

"Quite a mess you have here, eh, Sister?" Maniac looked over the folder, the photos and damage report making him cringe a little.

"It's only going to get messier after this." she said, sipping her red tea. "This is rather sanitary compared to what's coming."

"Why do you do this?" Maniac sighed. "These games... They're really dangerous Dreamer."

Dreamer finished her tea then poured herself another. "I know what I'm doing brother. Because the players aren't pawns anymore, but knights, rooks and bishops. I'm sure the students aren't stupid enough to fall for traps and spells like Donnie and his a complisses..." She sighed, her shoulders droopin a little. "And what fun would it be if I called times out in the middle of the game??"

\*\*\*

Basement--4:17

Her knuckles gently tapped on the door. "Kaj? Are you okay?" asked Elen.

"I'm not coming out!" she screamed. "I'm not coming out!"

"...It was Donovan wasn't it?" asked Envi. "So it's no big woop. We've been after the guy from day one."

"It doesn't matter! You guys saw me! Knuckles saw me!" Kaj buried her head in her hands. Her horns were back to their small petite size, and her talons were back to nails. Kaj's hair was still long like before, because hair doesn't just retract back into your skull like horns or nails. "...He probably thinks I'm a monster..."

"I think it was just us that saw you." said Elen. "Please come out of the utility closet... The damp smells are really...eck!"

"...I'll come out on one condition!" Kaj opened the door a crack. "We have to sneak to the locker room..." they all saw her white-grey skin was still streaked with blood.

\*\*\*

1521

Her claws dug into the grow, running on all fours like the wild beast she was. rain pelt her thin black fur, matting it down to her body. Her gold and red eyes glanced around, seeing he wasn't there. She grew furious, tossing her hair back, she howled. If he dared come... it would be hell. A rustle, in the bushes made her shift her wait, her razor tail sliced down three palm trees. He came at her, from the other side. His hooked antlers caught her antelope like structures. They wrestled for a few moments, until her clawed hands raked across his chest.

"I hate you!!" he tail lashed around, attempting to stab her opponent in the back. But he was swifter and was a better fighter. He jumped from tree to tree, then finally slung himself on her. Pinning her on her stomach, she growled and thrashed under his weight. "GET THE HELL OFF!!" Her male counterpart placed his hand on the back of her head.

Silvery white hair felt on his black furred face. She yowled and shrieked for him to get off, her quills nearly stabbing him in the face. He grew angry, and did something he wasn't supposed to do. He leaned over her tone body, grasping one antler in his mouth, he snapped it off.

She stopped thrashing under him, and barely moved. "What...what are you...?" He climbed off her, she looked at him. He knelt behind her a few feet away. Her silver antler in his mouth like a dog with a bone.

"That should calm you down." he dropped it, then came closer to her, nuzzling her neck affectionately. Her claw went across his face, but it healed seconds later. His clawed hands went to her other antler, snapping it off too. The Structures, spines sticking out of her shoulder blades and the back of her pelvic bone, simply fell off. The same with her counterpart, the horns and spines, fell off. He leaned against her, gently nipping at her body. A soft pur escaped her mouth as he made love to her. Anu softly called out his name... "B-Bacunawa...!"

\*\*\*

8:01a.m.

"NYA~~!" Jazmyn juttled up. Her face red. "Was I dreaming... of porn?!" She took a deep breath, then climbed out of bed. "I feel like brushing my teeth." She made her way to the bathroom and took out her tooth brush. She looked at the mirror, her eyes adjusting to the light. She screamed at what she saw. Envi, Chrystal, and Kaj came running Jazmyn looked at them.



"what is it Jazmyn?!!" asked Chii.

Jazmyn turned her head, her dark brown hair swaying. Her light brown eyes rimmed with tears.  
"I'm...Human."

## 21 - The Best Day Ever~~Su!

chapter Sixteen: The Best Day Ever~~Su!

9:51 a.m.

"Did you find her?" asked Elen. "...How did you loose her?"

"She bit my ear!" said Vee. "The girl's crazier when she's human." Vee tenderly rubbed his pointed ear. "She ran off in the Library, then disappeared."

"Why aren't you human?" asked Elen, her green eyes aglow with facination.

"Because I'm not just a vampire and a human." Vee yawned out is answer. He was doing that alot today. Infact, it was quite a few SD students seemed tired or not up to full power. "Jazmyn's fine. Freaking out a little, but fine."

\*\*\*

10:00 a.m.

Biting Vee's ear while he was talking, totally threw him off. Jazmyn knew she was acting crazy, but with all the stuff happening this week alone, she couldn't take any chances. Through the labrynth of bookshelves and tables, she had escaped back to the dorm where she felt safe. She pulled the stack of books Burn had given them from the shelf and began skimming them.

"There's got to be something here! Something!" she flipped through the pages, desperately trying to find an answer to her dilemna. '...eclipse...' Jazmyn looked around. "Great. Now I'm hearing voices." She closed the book, then reached for another. What really caught her attention, was the book under that book. "Vampires, The Truth Behind the Fangs?" She propped it on her lap and opened it. It was an old book, hand made and some pages hand written. 'Power Sources and Symbols: Many symbols, such as the Moon or the Roses are Romanticized versions of the west. Men and women who stalk around in the dusk, hunting for the weak, morphing into forms unimaginable. Many the forms of wolves, birds, or even other humans...' Jazmyn skipped around, trying to find something. "...One of a vampire's main power source is his or her own environment. Others may include the planetary alignment which have many effects on their magic abilities. Eclipses, such as 'Les Milinea du Umbreo', Dark Millenium, or the Millienium Eclipse has shown to take most if not all of energy from magical beings. Some vampires have even reverted back to their prebitten state..."

She flipped to the front. "Who the hell writes this?!" Jazmyn laughed uneasily when she didn't see any names. "Probably written by hunters. Marking up their calenders for the best days to kill." She blew a raspberry then kept looking through the book. Further curiosity made her read on, Jazmyn wanted to know exactly what breed she was. Wow, there were alot of species. From the Greek Lamia, who had the body of a woman and a bird stole away children in the night, to the Balinese Rangda, the demon who left its victims stifflimbed, drooling and demented. Even such information on Lillith of Persia, and her Owl

form were told. She felt disgusted the more she went on. The right techniques of removing a heart, burial or decapitation. A list of weapons that could kill was also listened. Silver to kill, iron to bind, belladonna to disorient, mercury to put in a coma... Even certain bloods could kill vampires.

Jazmyn sucked in her breath, then sighed it out softly. Her hands hit her face, her palms covering her eyes. 'You're blowing this way outta proportion! Calm down! CALM DOWN!!' Jazmyn's palms slammed on the book, her spiralling tattoos well visible. She saw on the books pages were the exact same pattern!

\*\*\*

1900

Brunswick, England

"Where the hell is he?!!" she screamed. They didn't answer her. Icicles rained down on her, and her hostage, but Kaj Howlett just simply dodged. The humans were killed, and she barely gave a damn. He asked for it. Donovan smiled, then sent another wave of ice on her.

"I...AM...SO...frackING...TIRED...OF...THIS!!!!" Fire lept up from her hands, a sword forming.

\*\*\*

She inflicted so much carnage, but Kaj still hadn't found Logan. She stopped where she was, and looked herself in the mirror. Covered in blood, clothes askew, and missing a horn and an eye. Kaj saw something on a table. At first she thought it was a marble, but found it was a human eye. A sapphire iris, absolutely dazzling. Kaj's fingers delicately brushed the blood and dust off the cornea. She moved her bangs away from her face and loaded the eye into her empty socket. It fit perfectly, and matched her vision of 20/20.

"Thank you Donovan." she purred. Blinking her dark lashes, her new eye adjusting to the light. "Now burn in hell."

\*\*\*

12:26 a.m.

Chrystal knocked on the door, knowing Jazmyn all too well. "Chica." she said, cracking the door open alittle. Jazmyn had stacks of books on her bed. Her legs were folded under a large book, and her back lay across books and a pillow. Napping. "Chica, wake up." Chrystal looked around the room. This morning it had been spick and span, clean to such immaculateness it looked like no one lived there. Now, books and papers were all over Jazmyn's side of the room.

Lots of notes on different breeds of vampires: Lamia, Rangda, Aswang, Mananangal, Vryolkas, Harpies, Sphynx...East meets West??? HOW???! Possible Aswang/Mananangal descendant... Anu + Bacu?? Grandparents??... Mom has brown hair & Golden eyes...Dad... Black hair... dark skin?? eyes....gold? Philippines?<< May i name the impossibilities?!! Asian looks= Black hair, dark brown eyes... SQUIGGLE-McSPOOCHIN CARGLE STUUK!!! Haha. XP

"Skuuuu..." she mumbled, stretching hallway. A pile shifted on the bed, falling on her. Jazmyn sat up,

being jabbed in the side with another book. "Neechan?"

"You stayed in the room..." Chrystal asked, sifting through some of her notes. "...The entire morning?"

"Noooo... I was walking with Vee... Heh heh... Then I bit him, and then I hid out in the room all day." Jazmyn gave her a sheepish smile. "So, what's up?"

"We're having lunch at Alejandro's." Chrystal slid open her dresser. She went through her things, finding a black and silver top decorated with a butterfly on the front. "I think I'll skip class too today." Chrystal changed clothes into the black and silver clothes and in moments was ready. "You're wearing that?" Jazmyn made a face at her. "A red and pink sundress?"

"...Well...YOUR SHIRT IS BACKLESS!!" she said, pointing an accusing finger.

"SO IS YOUR DRESS!!" said Chi. "I SEE YOUR BOOBIES!!!"

"NYA~~!" Jazmyn shouted. The door opened and Elen and Vee looked at the two.

"YOU!!" Vee joined in by pointing an accusing finger at Jazmyn.

"Yesh, moi." Jazmyn grinned, showing off her normal sized canines. "Here to walk us to lunch?"

"Oooh! Don't you two look smexy." Elen laughed. "We shall all skip class after lunch! And go down to the lake for an adventure of fun!!"

"YAY!!" The three girls punched the air in victory. They looked at Vee who wasn't even smiling. Elen punched his arm, and he moved his finger around like a noise maker that wasn't there. "Woopee."

\*\*\*

"Are you sure this is alright?" Burn asked Lao, her face burning up.

Lao smiled his genuine smile. "Yeah. It's fine. Just scooch closer, I won't bite."

"O-okay..." She slid over closer to him. She heard a few boys laughing, saying how cute she looked.

The warmth in Lao's purple eyes left, and he turned to the crowd. In an ice cold voice, calm but cynical, Lao asked, "What the frack are you looking at?!"

They all turned back to their business, scared of the young fighter. Burn blushed wildly, munching on a riceball quietly watching him. She looked around, waiting for her friends to arrive. Envi was talking with Zim, about the most random things she had ever heard.

"You mean you've seen a flying moose?!!" Envi asked in awe.

"And I thought most of you Earthings had mooses on this planet." He said, sipping his juicebox noisally.

"Not ones that fly!...What about fish?" Envi munched on an apple, the juice dripping down her chin until she used the back of her hand to wipe it away.

"Yes, yes yes. We have fish! They sing the most beautiful songs and run like the fastest creatures on the planet!" Zim's eye twitched. A little green and black puppy jumped out of nowhere screaming.

"JUST LIKE TOASTEROVENS!!!!" It howled. Zim attempted to tackle it, but the puppy flipped out of his view. He saw the lunchpersonel serving the students. "OMG!!! TOQUITOSSSSSS!!!"  
BUUUUUUUUUUUUUURIIIIIIIIIIIIITOOOOOOOOOOOOOS!!!"

"GIR! I demand you come here this instant! Zim is not pleased!!" the green boy ran across the table, careful of everyone's lunch, and following GIR.

Elen, Chrystal, and Vee waved to them and sat down at the table. The tall blue haired Connor Yao pulled up a chair and sat at the head of the table. "Yo, Lao, what is up with all the Chicas?" He noticed Burn's eyepatch. "Especially this Chica."

"Just an incedent." said Burn. "Nyaaa...Hey, Where's Jazmyn?"

"What?" Elen looked around. "Nani?!"

"Wtf?! She was right behind us!!" said Chrystal, standing up.

Elen and Chii looked at Vee. Their eyes a little angry. "You guys act as though I'm her sitter."

\*\*\*

"Omobakkaaaa!" she mumbled, looking around. "I...I only looked away for a second!... Oy...." Jazmyn ran her fingers through her wavy brown hair, scratching her head. "I have such a bad sense of direction."

"Maybe, we could help you?" asked a boy. Jazmyn turned to look at him. She couldn't look him in the eyes, something about him... "What's a pretty li'l thing like you, walking around in Alejandro's? All alone?"

"I-if you could...Just point me in the direction of the Cafeteria." Jazmyn smiled sheepishly, trying to avoid them. A leopard, a swordsman and a mage. Male Verve Sectors... but...

"Now why would you want to go there?" said the mage, put his hand on her shoulder. "It's really crowded, and loud."

"Let go of me!" she shouted. "Don't touch me." He grabbed both her wrists and slammed her against the wall.

"Or what?!" he snarled.

"Or THIS!" There was a loud crack as someone's foot made contact with his ribs. While the attacker was in midair, he used his other leg to gain balance on the wall and knock him into the floor. His hands

tucked into his pockets, he glared at the three boys. "What. The. frack. Do. You. Think. You. Are. Doing. TO MY GIRL?!!"

"Pchya!" The boy stood up, whipping blood from his mouth. "We were just going to have a little fun." He brushed his blonde-highlighted hair away from his face. "Besides, I heard most you Shadow Division students, aren't up to 100 percent today."

Chase didn't move. His orange eyes furious, but the rest of his features seemed calm, collected. "I don't need 100 percent to kick your sorry asses all over the place."

The bell rang. The group of Verve Sectors glared at Chase, and Chase glared back. They turned and went to class, leaving Chase in his stance and Jazmyn against the wall. After they left, he looked over his shoulder at the girl, gasping for breath. Her eyes terrified, and she shook a little.

"Why didn't you kick his @\$\$?" Chase asked, easing up. She shook her head, then relaxed.

"I-I-I froze..." she said. "...I didn't know what to..." Jazmyn felt his arm go around her.

Chase kissed her bare shoulder. "Don't let any boy touch you." he said, his teeth nipping at her skin. "If anyone is going to deflower you... it will be me."

XD XP

\*\*\*

outside, by the lake 2:45 p.m.

Kaj sat under her favorite tree, a large apple tree whose fruit was the reddest and the sweetest. She shot up a small spark, snapping a stem and one falling in her lap. Kaj looked at it's shiny red skin, reflecting back her gaze.

"How come you're outside? We were waiting for you in the Caf." said Elen, sitting next to Kaj.

"It's too crowded and loud." Kaj replied, crunching down on the fruit.

Chrystal lay down on the grass, looking up at the sky. "Vee lost Jazmyn." She paused for a moment, then said, "Again."

"I'M NOT HER SITTER!!" he replied. "Unlike you losers, I have class. See ya."

"It's so nice out today." said Chii, looking up at the sky. "Not to much sun, just enough clouds, and a little breeze." She stretched up her arms towards the sky, yawning, relaxing. Burn sat on the branch of a tree looking up at the sky too.

"Probably the best day ever." Burn smiled.

Fire rained down on them, swirling into a cyclone of flames. Dressed in a flowing white coat, and black

pants, a man with crimson red hair and sapphire blue eyes floated in the air above the girls. "And the last day of your lives."

Kaj caused the fire to swirl in the other direction, back at him. "Why are you doing this?!!!" asked Kaj. "Logan!!!"

Envi fired off an energy blast, it almost hit Logan, but he dodged at the last second. "Who the hell is this?!!!"

Kaj turned to her allies a sheepish look on her face. "My Son."

\*\*\*

"...What the hell are you doing?" asked Chase, looking at her from the corner of his eye.

"Sumimasen!" Jazmyn blushed and quickly pulled away. She began to wringing her hands nervously. "...Well...I... Thought I could hold your hand..."

"...Why?" asked Chase, a little astonished. "Usually, you'd beat the snot of those boys, then try to fight me when I kissed your arm." His hands went behind his head as they kept walking. Chase looked down at her again. Jazmyn saw him, and looked away, her face turning red. She was so quiet, and docile...like a lamb. Chase watched her walk, still the same catlike poise, but not in wide sexy strides. Light, delight movements, padding around on the balls of her feet. 'It's like she's a totally different person.' He groaned, then one of his hands fell to his side. "Here."

She smiled a weak smile, and gripped his hand. "Can I tell you something?" she asked.

"Go ahead. Shoot." Chase said, shoving his free hand into his pocket.

"Well." She took a deep breath. "Whether it's fighting or just talking with you... I really appreciate your company."

KAH-BAM!!!

The ground exploded from under them, sending Jazmyn in one direction and Chase in the other. She coughed from all marble dust flying around. "Wh-what was that?!" she shouted, panicked. "Chase?! Where are you?!"

"Damnit! Over here!" he shouted. A breeze from the busted wall cleared the dust from the hallway. Two figures cornered Jazmyn against a wall. One was a man, about Chase's age, with long black hair and dark tan skin. Tall and muscular, his frame draped in clothes that looked archaic, yet had modern flare. The same was with his partner. A child no older than 12, the girl had a dress whose top folded over her chest like a kimono, and long sleeves that ended at her fingertips. The dress stopped a few inches before her ankles, where it could be seen she was wearing pants underneath that tied off at the shoes. The girl was clad in black and pink, and the guy in red, black and white.

"Get away from her!" He ran for them, his fist raised to punch out the taller one. To Chase's horror, the

attacker turned and caught his fist.

"Stay out of this, Dragon." he said, his tone so monotonous, it was like he was dead inside. Which was a possibility.

"Who are you?!" Jazmyn asked.

The younger one smiled, and laughed in a sweet, adorable voice. "Neechan!" her pink hair falling in her face. "We're your worst dreams come true. Tee hee!"

"MeMe...?!" she murmured. This was just too damn much. It was that fracker and that damn Shen Gong Wu... the Shadow of Fear! It wasn't real! Nuh-uh! Not real! All her senses were screaming, yes it is! You smell them! You hear them! You see them! You feel them! THEY'RE frackING REAL!!!

'They're punishing you.' said a voice.

'Why?!' she looked at them, her body slowly curling into a fetal position.

'Because they think you're weak.' they responded. 'Show them wrong.'

The tattoos on her arms glowed then, consumed her entire arms. Her hands pressed against the wall, "Pyros!" The wall exploded, more marble dust filling the halls.

"Don't loose the target!" shouted the girl.

"I won't." responded the other.

The dust cleared again, and two more figures stood there. Complete opposites to the tall adult male and preteen female.

The woman wore a black porcelain mask, that had catlike ears and small silveryblue horns on the top. She looked around, which seemed pointless considering the mask had no eye holes. "Well, Kuya, the world sure has changed... Eck... The smell of halfbreeds is everywhere!"

"shoot! It has been forever!" Kuya stretched his arms above his head, a smirk on his face. "When was our last time?! Atlantis? Pompay? Tenochitlan?" He turned to the girl in pink and her partner. Kuya still had that wicked smirk on his face. "Hello Darling Sister."



## 22 - Square One

chapter Seventeen: Square One

1:09 p.m. (earlier that day)

"Knuckles! Oi!" she shouted, running after him. The red headed boy turned to look at her. His mauve eyes were bright, but uninterested in what she had to say. Knuckles turned back around, his back to her. Kaj's hand reached out and grabbed his jacket. "I need to talk to you... Knuckles--!"

He swiftly pulled his arm free and glared at her. "Get away from me. Whatever the hell you are."

"You need to know the whole truth..." Kaj snapped, her blue and red eyes glowing. "...Before you start making assumptions!"

The hallway was clear everyone had made it to class. Knuckles turned sideways to glare at her, just like all the other Verve Sectors looked at her. "What else do I need to know Delia? That's not even your real name is it?!" Knuckles snapped. "I heard from another student you're actually 400 years old, and not even a real human! I saw you Kaj! Eating a guy on the floor because he wouldn't tell you where Logan was!" He turned away from her and began walking again. "Looking for your demon lover, eh?"

"Logan isn't my lover! He's my--!" Kaj stopped herself before she gave away too much. "He was a threat. Donovan needed to die. It was a kill or be killed situation."

"Excuse me, but I'm late for class." was all he said. "Go back to your school... Shadow Division."

5:03 p.m. (present hour)

Logan punched Kaj in the face, sending her head back in an odd position. Loud cracking came from her spine as multiple digits severed and separated. But seconds later she was straight and everything was fine. She somersaulted backwards, dodging blows. The other girls tried to intervene or even help, but every time they ended up almost hitting Kaj. So they just sat back and watched, helpless.

"Why the hell's he fighting her, if Logan is her son?" asked Chrystal, "It isn't right!"

"And especially...Since he's not with Donovan?" Burn felt the powerful darkness enshrouding Logan. A deep hatred and coldness from deep inside the man that radiated out in such waves of power... She shivered, trying to rid herself of the aura. '...Why would someone hate their own parent... this much?'

Kaj turned sideways, catching his fist and flowing with the energy. As his body slowly dipped down, she elbowed him in the throat, then used an open palm strike to send Logan back ten feet. "Who taught you to fight, Eh?" she asked, a half snarl.

"I know your moves, Mother Dear. I studied them and I've tweaked them to my own device and style."

Logan replied, using the back of his hand to wipe away the spittle-blood on his chin. "You're tougher than I thought. Ya know? I thought I'd come in, and be out in ten minutes. But no, had tuh wait a whole damn week 'til the eclipse to get you two."

Kaj tensed, then ran for him. Her body lurched like she was going to punch, but her leg came up and hit Logan in his ribs. They dislocated loudly, all of them on the left side popping upward. Bunching up under the skin until finally impaling the flesh. That move she had only used once, on a mountain demon who had gotten in her way. Logan mimicked her, flowing with the energy, he spun into a right hook, and then sent Kaj's head back at another impossible angle.

Her shoes scraping against the rock and dirt ground as she slid back at least six feet. "What do you mean 'two'?" asked Kaj, regaining a stance.

"As in one..." He held up his index finger, pointing to the sky. "...And two." Logan held up his middle finger on the same hand, making a piece sign at her. "You... And the other abomination who is now human."

\*\*\*

5:41 p.m.

Kuya stood there, glaring at the girl and the man. "Which one?"

"The urchin." said A-te, through the mask.

Kuya ran his fingers through his long hair. His fingertips were decorated with a delicate manicure of silver. He cracked his knuckles loudly. "Perfect. Because I really hate this guy's face."

"Tsa-niichan!" the false Meme smiled, "May I?" He nodded solemnly, showing little, if no, emotion. "Tee hee! Yay." She didn't even move her feet, before she was in front of A-te. "Die halfbreed!!" A violet ball of energy burst out MeMe's hand, aimed at the woman's head. But it missed.

"Don't insult me." A-te said, her voice somewhat happy. The energy swerved back and burst into smaller globes. They floated around her hand. "Or else I'll give you a spanking child." A-te's hand closed, the sparks died into nothing. She put her arm down causing her extravagantly long sleeves to fall on the floor.

The false MeMe glared at her, then eased out of her fighting stance into a confident posture. One hand on her hip, the other ran through her hair, flipping it and causing it to fall on her shoulder. "You're dressed like a common brothel girl." MeMe said, her voice both sweet and poisonous.

Before the girl could react, the silk sleeve was around her throat. MeMe assumed she was smiling under the mask, that damned porcelain mask. "I'm tired of your mouth, Urchin." A-te pulled her arm down and back, causing MeMe to stumble and fall forward. In a swift twisting motion, the girl's neck would have snapped. If she was human. The doppelganger simply slid the sleeve off. MeMe reset her head to its correct arrangement, and grinned.

"Kazenohi!!" Amethyst flames tore through the sleeve, eating it until it reached her wrist. "Jigoku-Jin!"

Pink flames swirled around her, sending A-te into the ground.

"...Khan gei luro yta neiya jiu...!" The fires died, and turned to ice. Freezing the false MeMe in place, like a statue. "You think Japanese spells can work on me?!" She grabbed the sharpened peak of fire, loading the entire structure on her shoulder. "Kuya, we're taking this outside."

He grinned at the other doppelganger. "You heard the Lady. Outside." Kuya thumbed towards the broken and busted window. "This halfbreed blood is itching my nose like fire."

"Then why don't we just..." His hands braced and a large palm leaf shaped blade appeared. "Cut it off?!" He raised the sword. "BARONG LANGIT\*!!" (Sword of Heaven, pronounced Bah-rohng Lahng-it) Energy resonated from the sword, rippling through the air altering reality itself.

"You son of a dog!" snarled A-te. "Deis mos ku-nah! Zaizeia!" She reflected a wave of her own power back at him. Stopping his attack completely. "I. Said. Outside." The ice in her hand, began to melt. "Hotdamn." The ice burst into pieces, flying every which way.

\*\*\*

6:00 p.m.

"Red Thunder Strike!!" Logan sent a pulse of energy through Kaj. Burn's head was buzzing with all these negative... no.. evil thoughts running rampant in her brain. 'I hate you! Die! Just die! DIE dog DIE!!!' "DRAGON BARRAGE!!!"

Kaj caught both his fists and crossed his arms behind his back. "Logan...Baby...Why are you doing this...?!" she wheezed. "Why?!"

Logan's hand clenched tighter. "Why...? Why?!!" A transmutation circle formed under their feet. "I'll rip out your soul and tear it to shreds..." he snarled. "Like fracking paper!!!"

"Stop it! You'll die too!" Kaj screamed over the roaring of the alchemy spell. "STOP IT!! STOP IT!!!!!"

As the transmutation tore both of them apart... Kaj began seeing her lives she lived before. England, Germany, France, Spain... hundred of cities... thousands of deaths... Searching for him. She began running, her legs carrying her from city to city, Provence to Provence... at the very end of her path she saw something. A little kid... a boy... A... little.. redheaded... blue eyed... boy...

Bawling his marvelous blue eyes out, weeping bitterly, angrily cursing the God. Kaj felt so light... so free... so happy... She knelt to the boy's height. "What's wrong?"

"Why did she leave me alone? Why?" he sobbed. "She didn't even try to get me! I was standing right in front of her! Mama didn't want me!"

Kaj saw blood seeping out of the boy's open palms. He was so distraught, he couldn't control the fire coming from his body. The flames mainly came out his hands, and because of his emotions, they tore his flesh open. Singing it 'til even his demon blood couldn't take it. Kaj gently took hold of the boy's arm, and pulled him into her lap. "I didn't leave you baby... You were in the water... and I couldn't follow..."

"It was a trick! Jester played a trick on your mind!" Child Logan cried, sobs robbing him of air and making him stutter. "I-I wasn't in th-the R-r-r-river! I w-was standing in front of you! Th-Then you r-ran away! YOU RAN AWAY!!!"

"what?" Kaj was cut off when a vision was playing in front of her.

Like a movie, it showed Logan leaning over the bridge, looking at the water. Then a man in white walked up to him. He placed his hand on the top of Logan's head, and put a finger on his mouth. The man wore a mask, designed like a harlequin clown. He pulled a small statue, shaped like a Raven bird. "Shadow of Fear!" Kaj came running to the bridge, shouting for Logan to come back. Logan spoke, shouting, but nothing came out. The Jester's grip tightened on his cranium, causing the boy to wince. "I said hush boy." Then out of the river came a tentacle, grasping Kaj tight until she screamed. "She can't see you. She's facing her worst nightmare come true." Logan saw her sparkling azure eyes were dulled, as if she was blind, to a pale sky blue. "Loosing her only son. You."

## 23 - Paper Dolls

chapter Eighteen: Paper Dolls

6:39 p.m.

Crashing through the forest, A-te sent the MeMe clone into the ground. Her cotton candy pink hair wooshing around her head, her black and amethyst hanfu torn and covered with dirt. "Ghen dao nha Eabang!" The clone screamed as A-te erased her from existence. The white haired vampire would have held back, had she been human... A-te just loved watching her prey suffer, and gasp her last breath.

"Why would you do that to her?" asked Tsa. "She did take on the form of your younger sister..." A-te turned to look at him. "Are you really that heartless?" He drew his Barong sword. His speed rivaled hers, but it freaked A-te out when he nearly struck her. 'SHHHSFF!' 'Tink' Her porcelain mask fell off. "You say Japanese spells can't work? Well how about spells of the ancient tongue? ...Hos del kaer lak nung..."

A-te kept her eyes shut, her sleeve pressed against her forehead. Blood began pouring into the black fabric, making it sticky and darker than before. With the summer months, the sunset was pushed back until almost 9 o'clock. It was still too early for her to see. "frack!" she screamed. "Kuya!"

He intervened the fight between Tsa and A-te, summoning a naginata like weapon. A long handled sword by the name of Karasak-Eabang. "I thought you were supposed to be the good guys!" Kuya sneered. "Fighting with a dirty trick like that."

"It isn't dirty when you're fighting demons." said the Tsa doppelganger. "What's the matter? Can't stand the sun light?"

"Kuya! I--" started A-te, but he put his arm out for her to stop. Kuya turned to face A-te. She truly looked pitiful. Her eyes closed, blood dripping down her face, she looked like a wounded blind girl. But knowing her, she could see his hands, his form, even the smirk on his face.

"Don't sweat it, Ta." Kuya smiled a charming smile at Tsa, that soon melted into a crazed-fangy grin. "I've been waiting for this alllll day."

"Langit!" Tsa sent a wave of power at Kuya.

"Eabang!" A black barrier went around Kuya and A-te, absorbing the power. Kuya swung Karasak, dropping the barrier, and killing the sparks that danced around them. In seconds, the two males were bouncing from tree to tree, weapons clashing. Due to the shape of Barong, Kuya's sword Karasak couldn't grip it enough to have any close encounters. Tsa dodged another strike, ducking and coming at him as Kuya swung.

"Didn't anyone ever teach you never to leave yourself open?" Tsa whispered, pressing the blade against Kuya's throat. "Barong Langit!" An explosion rocked the ground, sending all three of them indifferent directions. Kuya's mind was spinning... Memories from past lives began pouring in like water at a broken dam...

~\*~\*~\*~

"Come on! Try and hit me!" Eloni laughed. Ten year old Anu came at her mother, sending a punch forward. Eloni stepped aside and slapped her fist down. Using only the heel of her hand, Eloni struck Anu under her chin, sending the girl on her butt. "Going straight forward like that... tsk tsk tsk... Come on. Get up, I'll show you how to block an attack like that." Anu rubbed her jaw, and looked up at Eloni, her golden eyes tearing. Eloni sighed and turned away. "I guess we're done for the day. Pfft!" She blew a raspberry as she walked away.

"Wait! I know I can do better!" Anu stood up. Eloni didn't pay attention to her. She got angry. Anu shifted her weight on her feet to the front and her toes. She pushed off the ground and came at Eloni. Her leg rose to knee Eloni in the side of the head. Her mother turned and dodged. She elbowed Anu's leg to make it pop out of place. The girl's hands went out and grabbed Eloni's shoulders, and swung her head forward.

"KUH-RACK!!"

"Gyaa!" Eloni stumbled back, and fell into a sit. "What was that Anurang?!!"

The little girl stood in a stance, her hurt leg at a slacked angle while the rest of her was tensed. "What? I didn't...Go straight forward...!" Blood dripped down Anu's forehead, her entire skull pulsing like a drum. Eloni looked at her daughter, then laughed whole heartedly. "Wh-what?! What's so funny Mother?!"

Eloni stood up, and dusted herself off. She felt the growing bulb on the front of her head, and checked for blood. Just a little, not enough to seek care, so she just wiped it away. Eloni staggered over to Anu, and put her hand on her daughter's head. "...You're weird." Anu flinched when Eloni stroked the knot on her head. "Let's go see Nung-Kira about this."

The pained look left Anu, and was replaced by a smile. She gripped her mother's hand tightly, and laughed. "Yes Mother." As they were walking from the clearing back to the village, Anu looked up at Eloni. The woman staggered a few times, but was able to keep her balance. She didn't ask if she wanted to stop, even if Eloni was hurt, as long as she could walk Eloni never stopped. "Nung-Kira!!! Manoy-Bacu!!" Anu waved to her aunt and Bacunawa. Just as Anu was about to let go of Eloni's hand to greet her family, but her mother gripped her hand tighter. "Yes...What is it?"

Two people were talking with Eloni's sisters, Kira, and Yinu. The two woman looked at the foreigners, from a distance Eloni could tell they were being as hostile as possible, without raising arms. The two dark skinned foreigners caught sight of Eloni and Anu. They bowed to Kira and Yinu, and began to walk towards Eloni. She pushed the ten year old behind her as they passed.

One was a woman in ocean colored clothes Anu recognized as 'hanfu'. Clothes of the mainland, Q'in. The same was with the male, but his were a darker color... like the sky while the sunset, before the sun was completely gone. Anu looked at them from behind her mother... She had never seen anyone like that... Anyone... like her. But their eyes were completely different from any she'd ever seen. Like blood, or the orchids in the tops of the jack fruit trees. Red? Was that what the color was called? The man caught her looking at him, and knelt to her height.

"Hello there." he smiled, his odd eyes glistening. Anu froze. With his eyes on her, her breathing suddenly felt labored and forced. "You must be Anuranga."

Eloni instinctively came between them, tensed and ready to fight. "Leave." she snarled.

"What? I just wanted to say hi to family." he said, still kneeling. "Nice to see to you too..Eh-lo-ni." He stretched out her name, just to annoy her.

Eloni was too fast for him to see. An open palm hit struck him in the chest, sending him into the ground. "TIGER STYLE!!" Both hands came together, the two fisted punch shattering multiple bones. He wasn't dead, wasn't even unconscious. She hated them... Those Ahnlu mainlanders. Eloni grasped Anu tightly and stepped over him. "Leave."

"Mother...?" asked Anu, Eloni still holding her by her arm. "Who was that?"

Eloni's angry eye disappeared, and she smiled sweetly. "Just some bad people. If you ever see them... don't talk to them... ever."

\*\*\*

7:34 p.m.

Kaj opened her eyes, and found a quivering little boy in her grasp. The alchemy still tearing them apart. She squeezed Logan tighter, letting him know she was there. After a few seconds more of this, Kaj pulled Logan closer to her and with what little strength she had left threw him out the circle. The seal on her back shattered and her wings opened to their full size. Chains came out of the circle and bound her to the ground. Little by little, her molecules began to separate and disintegrated into nothing.

Chrystal caught the little boy as he flew out the surviving vortex of energy. He was limp, unconscious and barely alive. She used a medical-jutsu technique to help replenish his life. None of them could get close enough to help Kaj, the alchemy threatening to tear anyone who got close apart.

'Bye...bye... baby...!' Kaj's eyes saw something. Time seemed to stop, everything stopped moving, even the bolts of energy from the transmutation stopped crackling.

'A mother shouldn't have to sacrifice themselves for their child.' said a voice. Kaj turned her head slightly, and saw someone in white kneeling next to her. Metallic-lavender colored ribbons

wrapped around her arms from above her elbows to her knuckles. There was a lavender gem, in the center of her chest, and just below the naval area. The same colored gems were on both her hands on the back of her wrists. 'And this child... My my my... He needs you the most.'

'Am I going to die slowly, listening to some angel patronize me?' Kaj's mind responded. An angry smirk on her lips as her eyes went in and out of focus.

'No.' she responded. 'I'm going to help you.' The woman's gloved hand extended and pressed on Kaj's back. The molecules stopped separating and began pulled back together. 'By the way... My name's Evelyn.'

\*\*\*

8:51 p.m.

Chii screamed when something dove from the sky and snatched Logan from her hands. "No!!" The marks on her back glowed. "You will not take this little one!" Her crystalline blue eyes turned silver, and the black pupils were visible. The scales of the butterfly's wings lit up, and something came out. Small blue will-o'-wisps appeared and a wolf. The animal didn't have hind legs, but a tail made of what looked like smoke. It took off after the flying creature, and tore through one of it's wings like paper.

"Deflect!!" screamed the harpy like creature. A transmutation symbol appeared in the air itself, hurting the wolf.

"Kachana!!" Chii screamed as the same type of energy pulsed through her. Her spiritual partner and her connected through life chains, felt the same pain when one was hurt. "shoot!" Chrystal's hands tugged on invisible strings. Chakra strings wrapped around certain areas of the transmute circle, opening it enough so Kachana could sliver out.

The wolf spirit didn't give up. Running on air, the wolf specter came at her again, finishing off her torn wing. Sending them spiraling into the ground. "Kachana!!" The wolf flew to the ground, aiming for the child. The creature released the boy, and flew back at Kachana. It's taloned hands wrapped around Kachana's neck. The wolf specter snarled, and sent the she-devil downward with a snap of her jaws. The boy still fell, until...

Something surged into the sky, catching the boy. Her black webbed wings beating slowing, catching the air so she hovered above the trees. The boy's eyes opened weakly, the sapphire spheres welling with tears. The fire demon nuzzled her child lovingly. "I got you, Logan... I got you." The boy drifted off the sleep. Her smile faded and the red head turned to face the beast. Now they would face the full fury of Kaj Crowley Howlett.

\*\*\*

10:22 p.m.

Still holding her child, Kaj dove for it. Tossing the canine spirit aside, the harpy-thing readied



itself for an attack. Kaj was disgusted by the way it looked. Ragged wings that looked like torn and worn leather. Bones stuck out from where the wings met her shoulder blades. Her skin was a sickly puke grey that looked scaly and rough. She had arms, and the build of a female, but everything below the waist, wasn't there. Her long wild white hair whipped around her face as she flew at Kaj. She spun her body downward, her legs coming in front of her and snapping downward on the beast's neck and skull. A loud crack came as the thing's head spun and ripped off.

"...You hurt my baby..." Kaj whispered her blue eyes tranquil. She smiled a sweet, loving smile, nuzzling her young one again. Her eye blinked and they both turned red. "You got what you deserve." The corpse caught a flame and fell to the earth, burning apart to nothing. She looked over to her friends. "You guy 'kay?"

"Yeah! Nothing some sleep can't fix!" shouted Elen.

"Yeah." Kaj repositioned Logan in her arms. "Some sleep." She looked over her shoulder at her wings. Marvelous and beautiful like a bat's. The webbing was black, but the handlike structures were a deep crimson red, like blood. And the seal itself, that kept her wings bound to her... broken. They were now, naturally attached to her bones, not forced into her body, stabbing into the skin and reattaching on the bones every time she flew. The pain was gone. The blood loss was gone. 'Who the hell are you... Evelyn?'

\*\*\*

3:29 a.m.

"Is this the place?" asked Kuya, shifting his passenger

A-te's blindfolded head turned to look at the door. "I don't know. Can't read this."

"Take off the blindfold and look you lazy dog." he snapped.

The woman laughed. "You know that's impossible. It's too damn light." Kuya looked around. Most of the lights were out, the only moon and stars glowed outside cast a dull, almost dead glow over everything. He would have protested, but he and A-te may have been Jazmyn. As pieces, they had flaws... like Kuya couldn't tell the aura differences of creatures,(Could tell if they were good or bad, just not one demon from the next) and A-te's eyes couldn't digest light. "Yeah... I smell dead blood and alcohol... Wonder if i could drink some... I could really go for some Mango Rum right now..."

"God, your just a damn chatter box aren't you?" Kuya used his foot to open the door. "But yeah... I could go for some Rum too." He slid the wounded boy off his back and onto the bed. A-te shuffled through some cabinets, searching for something. She held the glass bottle, pressing it against her cheek and purring.

"Alcoholooooooooooooo!" she purred. She turned to face Kuya. "What the hell are you doing?"

"He's quite handsome, wouldn't you agree?" asked Kuya, gently tilting Chase's chin upward. Admiring his face, the vampire could barely keep himself together. God, this lizard was making his skin crawl... Kuya was actually shivering. "Do you think she'd get mad if I had him??" Kuya asked, his voice menacing yet playful.

A-te uncorked the bottle and gulped a mouth full. She sighed loudly. The taste was bitter and burned her throat just the way she liked it. "Hell if I care. As you know... I prefer women to boys." She sipped the drink. So bitter. "Go right ahead...Not your first time raping someone." A-te snorted a laugh. "Might be his though." She put down the bottle and rustled around in the cabinets again. "The sun's gonna be up in a few minutes... Hate summer. Early sunrise, late sunset. All hot."

Kuya didn't respond, he was still admiring the boy. A-te ground her teeth in disgust. Falling all over himself for something like a lizard. She would have understood if the boy was born of dragon and human parents, but he smelled of changed blood. But then again, he was quite strong. "Her next one... should be this lad." said Kuya closing his eyes, he leaned over the boy. A smile on his mouth, Kuya kissed Chase, at first just a little pucker, then... it got deeper and deeper... until... Kuya was Frenching Chase. The dragon's eyes fluttered open.

His eyes adjusting to the dimlight, and realized it was not a gir, but a boy who was mouth raping him. Weak as Chase was, all he could do was grope around for something to hit him with. Kuya opened his golden eyes and smiled. He pulled off the terrified victim, watching his reaction. Kuya licked his lips and replied, "Yummy." The morning light began peaking through the blinds. "Damn... Wish we could have some fun before the sunrise... but I don't think four hours would be enough." he chuckled. A-te let out another disgusted sighed. "Well got to go, lover."

\*\*\*

4:29 a.m.

Kuya held out his hand for A-te, so she wouldn't trip over the raised part of the sliding door. She batted it away with a giddy laugh. "Great. You're drunk... and you didn't even share--" Kuya froze. An aura crept up his skin. This was the only aura he could recognize. He turned to face the intruder, his golden eyes furious. "You."

Night looked at them. "A-te, Kuya, I trust you're all and well." he smiled.

"...All...and...well...?!" snarled Kuya. He disappeared, moving faster than a blink. "AFTER WHAT YOU DID?! IS THAT ALL YOU CAN SAY?!!"

Kuya's fist missed Night's face. When he dodged, the tips of his fingers brushed over Kuya's arm, writing began appearing all over his skin. "I thought I sealed you two up a long time ago. After the Tenochtitlan incident." The writing, which was all over Kuya's arms, from his nails to his shoulders, spread to the rest of his body. He cursed as some sort of paralysis took him. He stood like a statue, barely able to breath. Night's hand went out, gripping an unseen force. "Khan ren su nei leia~!" The spell glowed, and Kuya was harshly pulled out of his battle stance to standing with his feet together and shoulders straight. Like a soldier who had ropes around his body from his knees to his head.

A-te fell under the same spell, but was collapsed on the floor. Kuya gave a strangled laugh. "You bastard. You're more of a coward than the girl. Instead of running, you put your problems under lock and key-- Gyaah!" The spiritual bind tightened. "Even worst... Then your F--" Kuya was cut off when the paralysis tightened.

"I did this for your own safety. As you know, your body can't feel auras right, and A-te can't stand light." Night said, flat and dull. "Keeping you inside... is better for everyone..."

"No..." A-te choked. "...You did this because...it benefits..." Her nails dug into the marble flooring. "Eabang!" The seals broke. "Now that you've weakened us... I guess we have no choice, now do we?" They turned into vapors and disappeared out of Alejandro's and back to Mercedes. "You're no different from Harimao, Manoy. Not one bit."

\*\*\*

Her hands went over the notebook, rereading what she has just written.

Kuya= Big brother, Filipino equivalent of Onii-san. May be used for any boy who is older. Other words would include Manoy and Noy

A-te= Big Sister, Filipino equivalent of Onee-chan. May be used for any girl who is older. Other words would include Nung, and Tita

Jazmyn opened the book again, quietly flipping through the pages. She stood up and stood at the foot of Chrystal's bed. She looked over at Chrystal. Jazmyn silently stalked over to Envi, then Kaj's bed. She saw the little boy snuggled up close to his mother.

His eyes opened, and even with no lights, they glowed. Logan yawned and hugged her closer. Jazmyn watched him... she was a little envious of him. Having his mother, and her accepting him completely. They were both fire demons, so there was little to keep them from separation. She wondered about her own parents... If either were alive, and she found them... would they except her? Halfbreeds were never accepted by their human or full demon counterparts, even if they were related by blood.

## 24 - TigerLily Kiss

chapter nineteen: TigerLily Kiss

9:00 a.m. Sunday

For students who were religious, Mass, Temple, and other practices were on Sunday. For nonreligious students, they just hung around, did extra credit, or worked on their fighting. Chrystal was walking around the courtyard when she saw a boy practicing his archery. She didn't notice him because he was the only archer, but because of his hair. It was silver with streaks of white. Which was shining in the sunlight, and deeply contrasted his dark brown skin. The boy had a black uniform, telling Chrystal he was shadow division. He pulled the arrow back. A twig snapped under her foot as she approached. He reacted and the arrow shot the ground near Chrystal's feet.

His face became red with embarrassment. "I'm sorry." He bowed and ran back to Alejandro's, before Chrystal could so much as get his name. She had seen him around the campase a few times. Mainly at the archery fields, or somewhere on the building reading. She didn't mean inside, like the library or studyhall, but the outside on the ledges where the birds hung out.

Chii bent down to get the arrow, when she noticed the paper tied to it. She unknotted the paper and began to read. "Hola Chica, my name is Kenith Hitachee. Hope to see you around. :D"

\*\*\*

"Disgusting little monster!" "Demon!" Visions moved around, like vespers and shadows flying around the room. "You're mom's gone and left her little half breed brat behind!!" "You killed her!!"

Jazmyn looked at her hands, they were covered in blood. A mirror appeared in front of her, someone looking back. "Father--?"

"No!" Kuya's hand came out the mirror, covering Jazmyn's face. "Stop dreaming!" he shouted. "Wake up!!"

\*\*\*

Jazmyn looked around where she was. She wasn't in her dorm, but in a classroom. Her back propped up on the window, and seated on the heater. Jazmyn saw a teacher writing on the board. He looked over his shoulder at her. "You have a whole day to sleep in, yet you come into my room and nap on the windowsil?"

"I came in an hour ago... And you weren't here." Jazmyn slipped off the heater. "I wanted to talk to you, is all."

Night kept writing on the board. "Dean Dreamer tells me you've found out what you are?"

"Yeah... A Filipino vampire called an Aswang." she said. "or maybe a Manananggal--"

"No. You're not one of those." Night said quickly, catching her attention. "So what did you want to talk about?"

"Someone told me you were an Aswang too?" Jazmyn asked. "And... I don't know... I just assumed... You might have known my parents?"

"Where'd you hear that?" Night asked, suprised.

"Dean Dreamer." Jazmyn said.

"Should have flipping known." he said in a weary tone. "Your parents?" The girl nodded. "I wouldn't call it knowing them. I've met them only once.. but it was a long time ago." Jazmyn's shoulders dropped. "I met your mom once."

"Really?! Could you tell me about her?!" Jazmyn asked.

Night pulled out his chair and started grading papers. "Well, you probably already know this, but she's human. And you remind me alot about her." Jazmyn gave him a questioning look. "She was strong and kind, and even took on people twice her size. Maria LaGrimas was a wonderful person. And even if she didn't raise you completely... I see her attitude has rubbed off on you perminently."

"...Do you know where she is now?" Jazmyn was afraid to ask.

"Sadly, I do not." Night didn't look up from his work.

Jazmyn looked at the clock. The information Night had given her had made her feel better, and at the same downtrodden. "Thanks. Well, I'm meeting someone, better leave now so I'm not late."

"Do me a favor, Miss Lun... And stay away from that Chase boy. He's nothing but trouble." Night said.

"He's not that bad. Chase is actually quite nice." she gave him a goofy smile. "I think I cankeep him in line."

Night looked up to see Jazmyn had already left. "You know what, this whole thing is a bunch of bull." said a voice. Floating near the ceiling, was Jessie. "This is truly pissing me off. The way you Las Putas handle all this." Jessie dropped to the ground, and looked at him. "Selling rat and calling it a garnished gamehen doesn't make it so."

"Did you just call me a Puta?" he asked through narrow eyes.

"Yeah." Jessie reached in her white sleeve, pulling out a scroll. "This is from Evelyn. She says it's about Nen and Diane."

\*\*\*

Jazmyn looked at her arms, decorated in the tribal tattoos. 'Memories, even if they aren't their own, are passed down from generation to generation. The only exceptions are if someone is bitten and turned by choice, then the vampires memories are also those of the darkchild's.' She kept walking in the forest. Jazmyn liked it their, dark and tranquil. Life there seemed undisturbed, and wild.

She kept waking until she saw a clearing. At first, she thought she saw a bunch of fighting dummies on the ground, but her eyes grew wide when she realized they weren't dummies. "Oh god." The angles of the head and limbs, she assumed they weren't alive... well not anymore. Blood and body parts were everywhere. A struggling student tried to crawl away. She knelt to his height. "Who did this?!!" she asked. Before he could answer, his head exploded.

Brainmatter and skull fragments were all over her. Covered in a thick red and grey paste, Jazmyn stumbled back. A scream caught in her throat, she tried to find who did this. Why did this feel so... familiar?!!

As Jazmyn was pushing away from the body, she bumped into something. She looked up and saw a redheaded girl she had never seen. She wore a Verve Sector uniform, white kneehighs, maryjane shoes and a head band with a black rose. "Hello Jazmyn Lun." she said sweetly. The girl pulled her up by her hair. "My name's Lee Astromoniv. Everyone calls me Bleed though. And I'm going to kill you."

She threw Jazmyn into the ground. Jazmyn quickly made a barrier of magic around her, shielding her half way from the attack. "Did you do this?!"

Bleed ran her fingers through her scarlet red hair. "Yes. Those damn organics... Don't know when to stop." Bleed walked over to a mangled corpse and with a wave of her hand, it split, blood spraying everywhere. Except Bleed, her white clothes were immaculate. "But I must say. It was quite entertaining. Especially when they cried out. 'Please stop!' 'Help me!' 'Dont kill me!'."

"Why...?" Jazmyn asked. She looked at herself. Her crimson covered hands were shaking. Jazmyn looked up to see Bleed only a few inches away from her face. Bleed's face was pretty, like an angel. Peachy-pink skin and long dark lashes. Her eyes though... were Scarlet like her hair. Like blood.

"I hate your eyes." Bleed said. Before Jazmyn could react, she was sailing through the air.

'D-did she hit me?!' Another punch sent Jazmyn from the air into the ground.

Bleed pushed her red locks away from her face. "So you're the halfbreed everyone's been talking about, eh?" Bleed grabbed her foot, and slammed Jazmyn into a tree. "To me, you're just another piece of organic shoot." she said, her voice not angry. It sounded, flat, not even in the family of mad or angry, but somewhere between relaxed and happy. Jazmyn struggled to stand, before getting hit again. Her body skidded across the ground, her uniform burning off from the friction.

'Organic?' Jazmyn thought where she heard that phrase before. Beth, one of Envi's sisters, had said it before. Was this Bleed, related to Envi in some way? Jazmyn looked at Bleed, and realized the girl hadn't moved from her spot. She tensed herself for another attack, only to be thrown into the air again. Something grabbed her around her neck, and began choking her. Jazmyn tried to grab at it, only to find

nothing was there.

"Nen?!!" she choked out, fear spreading through her. If the angel was here, working with the redhead, Jazmyn was already dead.

"No, he's not here." Bleed replied. She plucked a daisy from the ground and began smelling it. She opened her hand and it stood on its stem on her palm. It began to twirl slowly. "And yes... You are already dead." Bleed looked at Jazmyn from the corner of her eye. The daisy spun faster, then burned into nothing. Bleed's smile faded, into a solemn angry look. Her hand closed into a fist.

"NNRAAAUGH!!" her voice was strangled and weak. As her fingers scrambled to loosen the hold on her throat. Bleed's fingers moved about, as if she were the master of a marionette. Its strings attached to her fingertips. The vampire's arms were out, and legs together, the same pose as someone who was crucified. The holds constricted around her wrists, the force practically breaking her apart.

Blead's voice rang clearly in her ears. "Nobody's going to save you. Organic, because you aren't even worth it." Jazmyn saw Bleed wasn't moving her lips. "Weak little shoot. You just now noticing? It's a damn waste of energy just talking to you." A sharp pain stabbed Jazmyn in the back of her head. "This'll be far more fun. Let's see what's inside your head... shall we?"

Blead closed her eyes, then opened them, the iris engulfing the pupil. Jazmyn felt the psychic energy pry into her head. The power running rampant of her brainmatter, like needles over retinas. Her screams caught in her throat, Bleed smiled.

"it's not my fault! I'm sorry!" "I didn't do it!" "She's dead! She's dead!" "I'm not like him! I'm not!" "Don't kill them! They did nothing wrong." Mirrors were everywhere, neatly side by side, showing different parts of the girl's life. She saw a door, with no knob or handle. Bleed smirked, her hand out, the door opened. "Guh-get... out..." Jazmyn choked. "NOW!!!"

Blead's crimson eyes blinked, and she was in her own body, looking at the vampire girl. "You fracking organic dog!" Bleed said, her voice as cold as ice. "You think you have the power to tell me what to do?!!!"

"Y-your eyes... They're so... full of hate." Jazmyn gasped. "Who was it that hurt you so much?"

"SHUT YOUR DAMN MOUTH, ORGANIC shoot!!!" The ground beneath Bleed broke and sharp ends jutting upward. The pillars of stone came at Jazmyn, the satisfying sound of flesh being torn apart followed. "Much better." Bleed looked at the 'school' in the distance. Maybe she could find someone who could last longer than some damn 'vampire' or magicians.

"I...Won't...let...you...pass." she whispered. Jazmyn was quivering, her body covered in blood. None of which was her own. She held a mangled corpse of her fellow student as a shield. The spears of rocks went through his body, almost piercing Jazmyn. "I'm sorry."

The body slunk from her grasp, and Jazmyn came at her. Her golden eyes ablaze with hatred, the same cold hatred that Bleed had. Bleed's eyes followed the organics movements, she was fast, but not fast enough. Bleed used her powers to grab Jazmyn and throw her into the ground. "You'd be best to stay

down." Bleed said as began to pace. The pressure pushing Jazmyn's deeper in the dirt. "You know what I don't get? How an abomination like you can be born, and not kill yourself." Bleed's eyes blinked, her thick dark lashes goin down then up. "Most of your kind, are nothing but whores. fracking anything that moves." Jazmyn's nails dug into the ground, her eyes glaring at Bleed. She started to hate her voice, so calm and lovely. But she never held back on the vulgarity. "Because the only way you'd exist, Darling Halfbreed. Is if your father raped your mother... or if she was a whore."

"Take...that...BACK!!!" Jazmyn snarled, the psychic paralysis still pinning her to the ground. Her eyes fuious, brimming with tears. Bleed sideways glanced her, her eyes cold like ice, but colored like fire. "TAKE IT BAAAAAACK!!!" her voice boomed. "Tsa-nung-kai-eabang!"

Bleed gasped when her vision blurred, her hold on the organic slacked. "What?!" Jazmyn tried to come at her again. "Organic dog." Bleed said, again her voice collected. "What makes you think... You can match me?" Two invisible hands gripped Jazmyn, one around her throat, the other around her chest. "Eh, Organic?!"

Jazmyn smirked. "It was your father." she murmured. "In some way... he destroyed your trust." As she tried to laugh, it sounded like a strangled cat's yowl. "He did something... He changed you. Maybe gave you these powers? And making your eyes full of hate." A darkness from deep inside Jazmyn began dripping out, her mind overflowing with it. "But unlike you, dog, I was born this way. Eabang!"

The tattoos on her forearms grew to consume her arms, then met on her spine, forming tribal style wings. Jazmyn shattered the hold on herself. The black lines travelled down her wrists to the tips of her fingers, her nails becoming black talons. Bleed put a hand on her hip.

"So... Is this what an Aswang really looks like?" she asked, unimpressed. "You don't even know what an Aswang's place in the vampire Anarchy is, do you?" She dodged a clawed blow from Jazmyn. "Well I'll tell you. They're direct servants to the Dark Lord. Murderous little hoes who multiply like rats." Bleed smirk was cut short when she noticed a cut on her cheek. "what?"

Bleed's hand was twisted, her wrist popped. Jazmyn had her claws wrapped around the girl's arm. Her talons dug into Bleed's elbow, seperating the sections of her forearm. Jazmyn jumped back when she saw what Bleed really was. Silver cords and wires poked out of the synthetic skin. "You didn't really think I was a useless human, did you?" Bleed moved her index finger and her arm floated back to her. The wiring and mecha reconnected, the synthetic skin still split. "Just for that..." Bleed's smile grew broader, her eyes turned to a red metallic color. And they almost matched Beth's silvery-grey hues. "I'm paint the school's walls with your blood!"

The air crack like electricity as psychic energy flew at Jazmyn. A bright green energy bolt struck her shoulder, tearing it open. "You organics don't deserve to exist. ESPECIALLY WHEN YOU AREN'T EVEN A REAL HUMAN!!!"

Blood poured over the vampire's cocoa skin. "Isn't that... the Pot calling the Kettle black?!!!" Bleed flew at her, her fist made contact with Jazmyn's abdominal area. She screamed when the robot's hand made a disgusting crunching noise. She felt it ripple through her, attempting to liquify her organs.

She was thrown into the air, above the trees. Bleed flew up after them, then kicked her into ground.



"Don't compare yourself to me, Organic. I'm perfection. I'm a God."

"you hate humans... Yet you're made to look like one?" Jazmyn's mouth was colored red with her own blood, pouring out from her stomach, and lungs. A grin with her crimson fangs, made her look more and more like the demon Bleed said she was. "Quite a hypocrit, eh Miss Bleed? You could have taken on the form of an animal, a machine, anything whatsoever! Yet you chose a redheaded, red eyed freak whose caught in the inbetween of natural and an abomination!"

Bleed cracked her hands loudly, stretching her arms above her head. "Quite the hypocrit yourself, ain'tcha?" She yawned closing her eyes. Her hands closed into fists, holding her opponent in place. "We've been watching you for a while... seems you can survive with as little blood as a pint, never taking more because you fear of hurting them or being hurt yourself." Bleed opened her metallic red eyes. She wriggled her fingers, a body standing up and coming to her. She clicked her fingers and her eyes opened.

"Wh-where am i?!" she murmured. She saw the gaping hole where her arm used to be. "Nnrrr...!" she screamed. The Verve Sector fell to her knees, she looked at Jazmyn with terrified eyes. Then at Bleed. "Y-you!! You did this! Why?! W--?!!" Bleed grabbed her head and pulled her up by her hair.

"You have twenty seconds to save her." Bleed said, not looking at Jazmyn. "...1...2...3..." Jazmyn shatter the hold and ran for the girl. Her arms out to grab her. Rocks flew out the ground, coming at her. "...15...16...17..." Jazmyn had her arms around the girl, before Bleed reached twenty. A smile on her face, at least she was able to-- "Twenty." The girl's body exploded, sending coats of organ matter and blood everywhere. The redhead chuckled, then her laughter got louder, until she was holding her stomach to keep herself together. "That is what I think of Organics."

"...I don't care anymore!" she screamed. The marks on her body grew from her back to her neck, throat then to her face. They met her eyes, turning her corneas from white to black, and her pupils gold to white. "You're right." She whispered her black hair falling on her face. "We organics are soft, and fun to squish... But I'm one of those organics who lives to protect others."

"Protect? What? Like that Upper Kingdom has been, Miaruko Sol?" Bleed said. "And how you protected her?" Bleed began walking towards Jazmyn. Her steps soon turned into strides, and her strides into leaps. She was dancing over to the vampire in ballerina like moves. "You couldn't even protect someone who was in your hands!!" Bleed's foot struck Jazmyn, sending her through a ground of oak trees. "What in the name of God almighty, makes you think that's your purpose?!! TO PROTECT AND SERVE CREATURES WHO ARE SUPPOSED TO BE FOOD?!!"

Jazmyn lay on the ground, blood coming out of most of the pours in her body, she felt she could die right then and there. Bleed kicked aside a huge tree trunk, uncovering the bloody mess of a female. She was on her side, quivering and vommitting up blood. Her eyes, dulled with pain.

'Kill the demon!' 'I did nothing wrong! It wasn't me!' 'Drown her!' 'Burn her!' Her eyes looks at Bleed. She stood, towering over her prey, ready to do the finishing blow. Everything was distored, and red. "Oh, and one more thing." Just barely audible due to the damage inflicted on her, Jazmyn listened. Bleed said, in a calm sweet, lovely voice. "Your mom... Is dead."

## 25 - Colours of the Heart

not my best work... i think i was high off something when i finished this... damn...

### chapter twenty: Colours of the Heart

"...She's...Dead...?" Jazmyn's head was pounding. The one person she could actually connect with her, dead?

"Awww! Is mommy's little girl crying?" Bleed put bot of her hands on her hips and bent down to look at Jazmyn. "Don't worry, you'll be with her soon." She stod up straight. Bleed raised her hand, electricity jolting from her fingers. "Buh-bye." And everything went black.

\*\*\*

Burn was in the infermery. She lifted up the eyepatch, to inspect her eye. It wasn't as sore as it wa a few days ago, so Burn assumed it was better. Seeing double vision, it cleared. "Urm...Wow." Her eyes were two different colors. One was orange, it's natural color, and the other was a violet-red. She blinked and saw someone in the mirror looking back at her. She had blond hair too, but instead of black tips, hers were a pale purple. And animal ears... cat?... Ears.

No, not cat. They were like wolf ears, tipped with the same purple as her hair. "Sa...shiku?" Burn murmured. How did she know that name?

Ryota looked at Burn. "How is it? Still sore?" Burn nodded. Ryota scribbled down some notes. "Probably a lack of beta carrotine." Ryota shuffled through a few cabinets. "Funny... I thought i had more cleansing alcohol in here... Ah! here we go." She rattled a small bottle of pills."You take these, and I'll write up the perscription."

\*\*\*

"Ah...Ah...! AHHHH.....!! CHOOO!" Envi sneezed. Sending a jolt of electricity from her hands, to the floor, onto a table, then finally snapping the wooden structure in half. "Erm...Wow...What was that?" She looked up at the cloudy sky, somewhere far off she heard thunder roll in the darkness. "Must be an electrical storm." she mumbled. "Anyone see Jazmyn, today?" The students in the room quickly shook their heads, terrified Envi might sneeze again.

"Hiiiiii!" said a little voice. Envi looked around, to see if anyone was there. "Down here please!" The green haired cyborg looked down, and saw two little kids. One was Logan, the other was a six year old girl. "Hola! My name is Pipit." she said.

"...Hi." said Envi, wriggling her fingers. "This isn't really a place for Kids." She said, motioning to all the robotics and mechanical things in the class. "Go play with Kaj or something."

"We just came in here to see if you had any scraps." said Logan.

"Scraps?" Envi looked around the room. "There's a box over there. It's usually full of trash and broken stuff, so go ahead."

The two kids went under tables, behind people, so they avoided the students at work. "This is good." said Logan. He picked up the entire box of scrap metal with one hand and loaded it onto his shoulder. "Thanks! Bye!"

"Adios!" said Pipit, waving her arm wildly.

\*\*\*

Logan and Pipit walked to an empty classroom, that was under construction. The room was empty, except for a few tools, a step ladder and a tarp. He put the box down on the tarp and tipped it over. Logan clapped his hands once, then touched the pile. In a flash of light, the trash were turned into toys. A little train set, that ran on circular tracks about five feet round, and a bunch of little cars.

"Wow! That's such a cool trick!" said Pipit. "Where'd you learn that?"

Logan shrugged. "Dunno. Just born knowing i guess." He lifted his head up, and looked out the window at the grim sky. "....Someone's life... is about to end..."

"Hmm?" Pipit's wondrous smile faded. Her silver-blue eyes looked sadly at the train as she pushed it on the tracks. "It's MaMa... She's always been sad... But she'll be okay... MaMa always is." Her smile returned. "Because Big Sis-Mei is always with her."

\*\*\*

Jazmyn's eye opened, her blurred vision looking around to see the deep forest. She clawed at the ground, trying to stand up. The girl's hands felt a warm liquid drip on them. "...blood..." she murmured. Jazmyn remembered Bleed making that girl explode right in her hands. But... This blood was fresh. Still alive. Still hot. Jazmyn weakly turned her head to look at what she was leaning against. Better, who she was against. "...Mister... Night...!"

She struggled to stand, but fell kneeling a foot or so away. His head was turned at an angle, looking towards the sky, and all it's darkness. There was a gaping hole in his gut, blood gushing out onto his suit and the ground. Night's dulled silver eyes looked at her. "...Hey..." he managed to say. "...Sup Chica?" He tried to sit up traighter, only to groan, and fall back. "Damn that girl... packs quite a wallop."

"I'll..go get help...!" Jazmyn's legs wouldn't move. Her hands tried to push off the ground, her les still wouldn't respond. "...I'm so cold..." she cried. Tears and blood streaking down her cheeks. "I'm sorry--"

Night grinned. "It's okay." he responded, gently holding her hand. In a harsh tug, she was in his lap. He tilted her head upward, and bit down on her throat. Her eyes opened to there full extent. She tried to pull free, only to have his teeth sink in deeper.

'Why Are you doing this?!' a strangled voice cried. In her mind, the voice was so shrill and loud, screaming in absolute agony. Like no pain she had ever heard. 'Make him stop! He's hurting us! Make him stop, Anu!'

Night's grip slacked and his jaws released her. She fell back, just lying in a pool of her own life. "Ha...Ha..." she sighed. 'Well...Are you happy... eh, God?' Her eyes just closed, and opened to have water droplets fall on her face. 'I'm finally going to kick the bucket! Ha! And i'll never see my mother, father, or sister ever again!'

"shoot." Jessie gently tapped Jazmyn's shoulder with her foot. "Don't tell me you're gonna die. Not like this." She asked, bending at the waist to look at her upside down. "You'd be giving, Nen and Diane the satisfaction of them winning."

'What do those two have to do with...anything...?' she thought. Jazmyn coughed, blood and rain went up her nose.

"Mom wouldn't want you to die." Jessie said, standing up straight. "Neither would Sister-Mei." Jessie sighed loudly. "I'll do you a solid, and when i do, you have to keep a promise to me, okay?" Jazmyn felt like smacking this girl upside the head. She sure loved to take her time. "I'll fix you up. And tell you all you need to know about your Mom. Dealy?" Jessie took the gurgling noise the vampire made as a yes. "Here we go."

\*\*\*

Bleed started making her way to the hellhole of a 'school.' She danced across the lake, torrents of water dancing around her like snakes, following her moves in harmony.

"That little Organic." Bleed smirked. "What a waste of molecules." 'You need to stop this! It isn't right!' Bleed stopped where she was, in the middle of te lake. "You need to shut up, brat. You're not in control anymore." She smiled, but the voice inside wouldn't be quiet. 'That girl! She didn't need to die! Neither did the teacher! Or all those other students! Bleed you need to stop!!' "SHUT THE HELL UP LEE!! YOU HAVE NO SAY IN THE MATTER!!"

Rain poured heavier. A psychic umbrella formed shielding Bleed from the rain. She started walking again, when someone appeared in front of her. "Step aside."

"You're making my job a whole lot harder." said the girl, pushing her white hair away from her olive face. "I mean come on. I can't write up contracts just like that! You can't just slaughter kids because you want to." Jessie sighed again, looking up at the sky. "I can't fracking bring them back now."

"Get out my way, Organic." Bleed snapped, her arms crossed over her chest as she tapped her foot impatiently. "Now." Jessie shook her head. "God. Don't you people get it?!" In a blur, Jessie's head was torn off, and flew across the lake. "You all piss me off so damn much."

"Ditto." said Jessie. Her arm waved and her head floated back to her. "You're the one who's inferior." Her hands placed her head on her neck, and the vessels reconnected themselves. "You can't kill what has already died." Jessie thumbed behind her. "Or what grows stronger from death."

Bleed looked to see that damn organic again! Her golden eyes more vibrant than before. Along her arms, were what looked like her skin was black. She ran across the lake, past Jessie and straight for Bleed. Her red eyes grew wide when the organic's fist crashed into her face. The shot sent her back twenty feet, back onto the shore.

"dog!" Bleed sat up, expecting Jazmyn to still be on the other side of the lake. But she was standing over Bleed, staring into her red eyes with such hatred, and malice. "Get the frack away from me!!"

"You were once human." Jazmyn said. "You were born human. Made human. Then by a sick twist of fate, you were hurt. Really fracked up hurt." Jazmyn's claws dug into a tree as she spoke. Making a creaking noise as she ripped into the wood. "So damn badly, you had two choices. Die slowly, painfully slow, or die quick. But someone want you to live."

Bleed sent out a psychic strike, it hit Jazmyn, sending her skidding across the water like a flat stone. The vampire regained her balance and flipped into another stance. "Shut your mouth organic whore! The only reason it should be open is to sexually please your partner."

"Honey. We ain't talking 'bout me." Jazmyn sneered. "We're talkin' about you and how you came from worthless organic to all mighty and powerful Bleed." Bleed flew at Jazmyn, a punch aiming for her skull. Jazmyn caught it. "You had fracking everything. And you threw it all away!!"

Jazmyn punched Bleed, the telepath brought her leg up and kicked the vampire in the side. A loud CRAK! as she broke multiple ribs and a part of her shoulder. Jazmyn grabbed Bleed by her elbows and threw her into the water. She sunk seven feet but flew back up in a matter of minutes. 'This girl...! This ORGANIC!! How the hell did she know about what happened back then?!

"I told the Chica." said Jessie. "Though it wasn't all that hard. Vampires also have low telepathic powers. The problem is working them so that they can use them later on in life." Jessie pushed her sideways ponytail back only to have it fall back on her shoulder. "It's more of a defensive thing. If someone tries to get inside their head, most likely the attack backfires. So your mind was just as open to Jazzy when you first dove in, looking for amo about her mom. I just organized it so she could understand."

Bleed looked back at Jazmyn. She held up her hand, and her talons grew. "Let's go, Lee."

\*\*\*

The battle raged on, blood and circuits flew everywhere. This didn't look like a fight between two super powered girls, but between , if anything short of, monsters. Bleed's hand brought together molecules of energy, and blasted a hole through the vampire's stomach. The surging pain went through her. Everything was moving around her. Rocks, tree branches, dirt, a cyclone of debris and psychic power.

Bleed dove at her, her booted foot coming up and kicking Jazmyn in the head. Her skull almost twisted all the way around. Jazmyn's clawed hand went for an uppercut, missing Bleed's body but tearing the front of her uniform to shreds. Bleed somersaulted back, dodging the rest of attack. She looked back at Jazmyn. The vampire shivered and shook like a dog in the rain. Her hand touched the wound on her stomach, it healed quickly just leaving a scarlet stain on her skin. Bleed was still stunned, she didn't see

the vampire.

Next thing she knows, Bleed was on the ground. When she tried to stand up, Jazmyn's foot slammed on her abdomen. Her claws were at Bleed's throat, ready to sever her head from her body.

"Okay." said Jessie. "Finish her."

\*\*\*

Three years have passed since Bacu left the island to become a scholar in the mainland. The day is quiet, until the afternoon when a strange convoy comes to Anu's village. Baring grave news...

"Are you Lady Anurang, of the Maracabay Tribe?" asked a voice. Anu turned to see a small man, dressed in Q'in clothes, on a water buffalo drawn cart.

"Yes." She put down her son, and walked towards the messenger. He held something out to her. A long package wrapped in silk decorated in flowers and birds with long tails. "What is it?"

"Master Bacunawa sent specific instructions, that this be delivered to you." he responded.

Anu opened it. A scream caught in her throat. "But... This is his sword! His gift from father! He would never give this to me! Unless--" She looked up at messenger. "No."

"I'm sorry. But the rebellion from the west claimed many lives. We could not find Master among the numbers... but even such a marvelous warrior as Lord Bacunawa could not have survived the war."

"No." she snapped. Grasping the sword tighter. "He couldn't have died! This must be a mistake! How hard did you look?!"

He cleared his throat. "I'm sorry it took so long... but Master was killed over five months ago."

Anu felt her heart sink. Like someone had just torn it out, then stomped on it. "Why would it take that long to get the message through?" she asked, her voice shaking. Her son came up to her and tugged on her skirt. His twin sister ran to them and also tugged on her skirt. Anu looked down at them, and they looked back at her. She wiped away her tears, and bowed to the messenger. "Thank you."

\*\*\*

Alejandro's

"Hey, Envi." said a voice. The green haired cyborg looked up to see a hooded figure in the doorway of the robotics class. She held a red headed girl in a Verve Sector uniform. She walked over and placed her on an empty table. "You think you and Zim could fix her?"

Envi looked over the torn up girl, she inspected the busted up wiring. "Yeah... I think so..." She looked at the hooded girl. "Jazmyn? Is that you? Why are you wearing a Verve sweatshirt?"

Jazmyn turned and left. She was done talking. Kaj and Chrystal were walking down the hall, talking about stuff, when they spotted Jazmyn coming.

"Hey, Chica!" Chrystal waved. She ran up to the girl, but stopped a few feet away. Kaj stopped too, and looked at the young vampire. "...You smell... of human blood..."

Jazmyn looked out the window, and the pouring rain as it beated down the glass. She didn't say anything, sh just kept looking out the window. "I'm going to go clean up." she finally said after minutes of silence.

Chrystal grabbed her arm. "Jazmyn, what happened?"

"Nothing, Chii...now... please let go..." Jazmyn choked out.

"Not until you tell us what's going on!" Kaj snapped. "What did you do?!"

Jazmyn looked at the firedemon. "It's more like what I didn't do." she smirked. "Why, Kaj Howlett? You think i killed someone? And what if i did?"

"Jazmyn! Don't talk like that!" Chrystal said, tensing.

Kaj glared at her. "What you didn't do?!"

"What the hell are you wearing?!" shrieked voice. "That's Jacob's sweatshirt!! Why the frack are you wearing it?!" The three Shadow division turned to see a mixed crowd Verve Sectors. A girl with green eyes and black hair was staring at Jazmyn.

"He's dead." she replied, her voice so flat it sent a shiver down their spines.

"What?!" she screamed. "What did you do vampire?! You should have been killed the moment you stepped off the bus!" The green eyed girl came at Jazmyn. "Kiyone chidori!" Thousands of small birds constructed of magic flew at Jazmyn.

"Nhe juo leia pon vahn." The birds burst into flower petals, which swirled around the students like sakura. She pulled off the hood, so everyone could see her. Blood covered her neck and cheeks, her hair clumped in sections because of the crimson liquid drying. She walked up to the Verve Sectors. "Don't you dare say anything when you don't know the whole story." she smirked. "Now step aside, Human."

The tension in the air could have been cut with a plastic spork.

"So why'd you kill them?! So you could eat him?" asked Yuki.

Chrystal glared at the girl, then at Jazmyn. 'What's happening to you, Chica?'

## 26 - Baby Tears

### chapter twenty: Baby Tears

"Goodmorning!" said Elen, waving frantically to her friends.

"Morning." said Chrystal and Burn.

"Hey." said Kaj.

Envi came rushing into first hour, and stood in the doorway, smiling a grand smile. "Good Morning Mercedes Academy, I'd like to introduce a new student!" she said. "And looky looky what Zim and me did!" She stepped aside to usher a redheaded girl into the class, wearing a Shadow Division uniform. Envi introduced the new student. "This is Lee Astromononiv."

"Goodmorning Everyone." she said in a soft polite voice. She smiled sweetly, her blue eyes shining brightly.

They looked at her. "She looks like she could be Logan's sister." said Elen, nudging Kaj in the side.

"Yeah." Kaj turned to Envi. "Where'd you say she was from?"

"Ehdunno." Invidia shot Kaj a wild grin. "Jazzywazzy just dropped her off at the mechashop, askin' to fix her up and BAM here she is." She moved her arms like she was a gameshow host introducing a prize. "Ta~da!"

"So she's an android?" asked Chrystal. "Wow... She's so pretty. You look so real."

"Thank you." said Lee. A Verve Sector bumped into Lee, causing her to stumble.

"Oops, sorry." she said, with false sincerity.

"Why you--!" started Chrystal.

A woman walked in the class. She had dark brown hair and aqua colored eyes. And black fox ears on the top of her head. She looked pretty young, no older then a Senior. "Settle down class." she said. The girls found their seats and got out their books. "Please open your books to page 593, and start reading to yourselves."

A Shadow Division Inu raised her hand. "Excuse me... but where's Mr. Night?" A stir of murmurs and whispers swept across the room, each student wondering about the teacher's absense.

The Kitsune gently tapped the board. "Mr. Night has been... indisposed. And from now on, I'll be teaching your Combat classes." She picked up a piece of chalk and wrote her name on the blackboard.



"Haruka Satou." Ms. Satou's eyes glanced towards the doorway, looking at someone. "Ah, Miss Lun, Ryota told me you'd be out today."

"Sorry I'm late." she said flatly. Jazmyn held out a note to Ms. Satou. "It won't happen again."

"All right." she smiled. "Page 593, read the next two chapters, and we'll have a discussion at the end of the hour about it."

The Verve Sector from yesterday stood up. "Why should she even be aloud in class?!"

"Isn't she a suspect in that slaughter the Lacrosse team found this morning?" said another.

Jazmyn ignored them and sat in her desk. She opened her book and began reading.

\*\*\*

"Hola!" Someone jumped on her back. "You need a big hug!"

"Pipit." Jazmyn smiled. "...did Jessie send you?"

"No, Sillywilkens! I came 'cuz you look so saaaaaad!" the sparrow girl hugged her. "Big sister... she's not very angry... but she doesn't like it when people don't listen."

"Well I don't like it when people use me." Jazmyn responded. "Why aren't you playing with your buddy Logan?"

"He went to hangout with Auntie Kaj." said Pipit. "Hey! looky! It's Ellie, Vivi, Chryssie, and Burnie!" The four girls looked at Jazmyn and Pipit. Jazmyn gave a little wave, but made a small choking noise. Pipit's hands had gripped on her jacket, tightening the shirt's collar. "Are you gonna hang out with Mr. Hiss today?"

Burn laughed alittle. "Mr. Hiss?"

"Yeah." said Pipit. "The boy with the green hair? He's like a snake." She stuck out her tongue and hissed. "I wanna hang out ith Chryssie! Can I??" Jazmyn looked over at Chii.

"If it's alright with you...?" she asked.

Chrystal smiled. "No problem." The Native girl tossed her wavy black hair. "I have swim next, and I'm pretty sure they'll let her play."

"Yay." the little girl slid off Jazmyn's back and walked over to Chrystal. "Bye!"

Envi watched them go down the hall then to the pool area. "So what happened yesterday...?"

"Hmm?" Jazmyn looked from the bulletin board at Invidia. "Yesterday...? Oh the usual. Fighting, killing, my mind about to explode and killing the murderer." She gave them a weak smile, her eyes not even

trying to hide the pain. "but it's all over with."

"So someone else did in all those students?" asked Burn.

"That's what i said." Jazmyn said, bored. "and I already told Dean Maniac and Dean Dreamer, so the subject should be as good as the victims. Dead."

"Well who did it?" asked Burn.

"That detail i told the Deans. And they said she's my responsibility since I brought her back alive." Jazmyn tore a bulletin off, folded it up and tucked it into her pocket.

"So you mean... Bleed?" asked Envi. Her voice became a whisper, hissing at Jazmyn. "And you made me repair her?!! After what she did?!"

The vampire shrugged. "I thought you could extract some information from her if she died." Jazmyn looked at her hands. A hallucination made her see blood all over them. But it passed in a fleeting second. "Either way, I'd be a step closer to getting something."

"What the hell?" Elen nearly shouted. "Aren't you being a little selfish?"

"This doesn't even sound like you." said Envi. "Where's the bright happy girl who loves to fight, just to fight?"

"Ehdunno." Jazmyn looked behind Envi to see Lee. "Maybe she's on vacation." Being pestered by some Verves. "Hey! Leave her alone!"

"Oh great another Shadow Division dog. Why don't you go and screw your boyfriend?" Snapped a blue haired girl. "SD students are notorious for being sluts--" Jazmyn socked the girl in the stomach.

"Why don't you give yours a blowjob? Everyone knows Verves give the best." The vampire sneered. She turned to Lee. "Come on. Your schedule coincides with mine, so I'll walk you to class."

"Wait... Before then.. I just want to say..." Lee bowed at the waist. "I'm sorry for everything i did. EVERYTHING."

Jazmyn grinned. "Good." She grabbed her hand and began walking. "You don't have to act all docile and crap. You can act a little rebellious. Show some attitude... Like Envi."

"Why am I an example?" she shot back, laughing.

"Because... My friends are awesome." she shrugged. "Or something on those lines."

\*\*\*

Kaj was writing down some notes in algebra class, and Logan was watching her. She saw he was on the lines of falling asleep. She reached in her bag. Kaj pulled out some blank paper and a pencil to draw.

There was a knock at the door.

"Sorry I'm late." said the Verve Sector. She handed a note to the teacher. When Kaj saw her, she thought it was Jazmyn. But this girl was taller and had red eyes.

"Mana Nangal?" asked the Teacher, making sure his pronunciation was correct. "Damn transfers. Alright, take your seat and strt taking notes. You know how to do this right?" He asked, pointing to the numbers and letters on the board. Mana nodded.

She took a seat across the aisle from Logan and Kaj. Mana smiled at Logan, and gave him a little wave. The boy completely avoided her, ignoring her and making sure not to make eye contact.

Kaj noticed this, and also saw Logan looked a little pale. "What's wrong?"

"I don't like that girl." he whispered. "Mana... I don't like her..."

Kaj looked at the ten year old. His grip on the pencil tightened so much, it snapped. She glaced over at Mana. Her right hand was covered in what looked like burns. Her red eyes looked at the board, then over at Kaj. Mana's smiled gave her the creeps. It was a pretty smile, but her aura... it felt awkward. Not at all that of a Verve. Not even close to a Shadow... something much too... Dark to be considered coming to the school.

The bell rang, and class ended. Kaj grabbed Logan's arm and held it tight. 'Whatever this girl is... she shouldn't be here.'

\*\*\*

Jessie was hovering over the school, invisibly watching all it's inhabitants. A white cloaked figure sat in the air next to her. "What's the matter?"

"That Jazmyn girl... She's really stupid." Jessie said.

Evelyn laughed. "You're just angry she yelled at you." Her gloved hand reached over and patted Jessie on the head. "So I heard there was a disturbance in the balance yesterday."

"Yeah." Jessie pouted. "At least thirty students were killed. Really wasn't their time." She ruffled her spiky white hair angrily. "Damn redhead was operating outside the Axis of Rules! How was that possible?!"

Evelyn crossed her legs, and pulled down her hood. Her lavender eyes looked at the school. "Ehdunno." the woman shrugged.

"That phrase annoys me." Jessie said with narrowed eyes.

Evelyn gently grasped the top of Jessie's head with one hand. "Don't push the Niña. she could have snapped yesterday. And we all remember the 'Lizzy' incedent, don't we?"

"How was that myyyy fault?!" Jessie said. "You and the Puta shouldn't have--" Jessie stopped talking and looked down at the school. "Why the hell is she here?! I thought that thing was killed over a week ago!" The white haired angel hovered, contemplating what she could do.

Evelyn sat in the air, also looking down. "Calm down, Niñita." she spoke. Even if her voice was emotionless, Jessie knew Evelyn was just as tense as she was. "...I'm sure the girls can do this without any help from you or Pipit."

\*\*\*

Alejandro's, Free Study.

Lao was watching Chase more carefully now. The 'incedent' that happened lasy night had completely and utterly destroyed what little trust Lao had for him.

Cynic saw the death glare Lao was giving Chase and was laughing his @\$ off. "What did you do now?"

Chase glared at Cynic. "Nothing." he replied.

"If it were nothing, Lao wouldn't be all like... 'Grrr', 'Roar' and 'I'm Going to Kill You'." Cynic reposition his chair so he was sitting on it backwards. "I bet it was something bad." He looked over at Lao. "Or something really naughty."

"I messed with a girl." Chase said, annoyed Cynic wouldn't leave him alone. "That's it. Now leave me the frack alone."

"Oooh! Must of been super naughty." Cynic laughed. A teacher shushed them to be quiet. So when his back was turned, Chase kick the chair from under Cynic.

"Shh!" snapped the teacher.

\*\*\*

Mercedes (7:21p.m.)

Logan and Pipit were walking around, playing around with their toys from yesterday. They tied the train to a string and dragged it behind them. The two kids took turns pulling the train, and it was Logan's turn. Pipit was laughing, following him. They both stopped, and saw Mana coming out of a classroom.

Pipit grabbed Logan's arm. She gave him a tug, her voice quivered. "We gotta go..!"

"Well hello there." said Mana. She began to approach them. "I don't believe we've met." Logan held Pipit's hand. They turned but before they could run, Mana grabbed Pipit's collar. "It's rude to not introduce yourself." she said.

"Let me go! Let me go!" Pipit shrieked.

Logan kicked her arm, making Mana drop the sparrow girl. "Ow! Why you little!" Mana backed up, smirking. "Quite a kick you've got there. Little Logan Howlett." She looked over at Pipit. "And my,

Maya-anak." She took a step closer, "How you've grown. Last time i saw you, you were still a baby... And alive."

"Hey." Burn stood a few feet away. "Didn't anyone tell you it ain't nice to beat on kids?" The blonde glared at Mana. And the red eyed girl glared back.

"Go mind your business, Halfbreed." she rolled her eyes.

Burn blinked. "Aren't you a Verve Sector too?" she asked, tensing up. She dove into Mana's mind, only to be thrown out seconds later. "Holy..! You're anything but a Verve!"

Mana looked out the window, the sky was turning a deep pink and orange. "Well," she smiled politely. "Guess my guise was found out before i even found them." Mana's red eyes glowed. "But let's face it. I'm not even here for that Second breed or the Contractor." The girl stretched her arms above her head. "I'm really after those damn Ahluns I've heard so fracking much about."

Burn's aura began to bristle. "Well to get to anyone." Her hands formed into fists, and she ran at Mana. "You'll have to fight me first!"

Mana dodged, and kicked Burn, sending her into a wall. "Now kiddies. Let's go 'fore I get mad." Burn sent a wave of psychic energy at Mana. A suprised cry came from her as her head smacked against the tiled floor. Mana pushed herself up halfway, blood dripping from her busted lip and nose. "You little human dog!"

"Whatever the hell you are! Back the frack up!" Burn shouted. Her orange eyes turned violet.

Mana laughed. "You ain't even sure what I am... And you want to fight me?! Ha!" Torrents of wind blew down the hall, even though there were no windows open. "You humans are so damn funny!" Mana disappeared then reappeared an inch away from Burn. "Too bad you didn't listen. Now I'm gonna kill ya."

\*\*\*

Yesterday(because I'm a perv who loves gore)

"No." snapped Jazmyn. She pulled her hand from around Bleed's neck, but kept her foot where it was. Her gold and black eyes glaring down at Bleed. "Get out."

"What?! You needed to finish this! She killed all those humans and--" Jessie started.

"THEN YOU DO IT!" Jazmyn screamed. "I'm not going to do anymore of your damn work. All you 'angels' are the same! Diane, NenTar, Rueban, Jessie! All unwilling to get your hands dirty!"

Jessie's brows raised in shock. It had been decades since someone had actually talked back to her. She smiled, "Hmph, guess you really are her daughter."

Jazmyn looked down at Bleed. Her top was almost severed from her bottom, the kick on her abdomine tore away most of her false skin. "You know what... I'm grateful you helped me, but keep the information about her... It's better to let sleeping dogs lie." The vampire bent down and picked up Bleed. "Go help

Ian." She bound back to school.

\*\*\*

I don't want to die. I don't want to kill. I want to help. I want to protect. But how the frack am i supposed to do that? If i do one thing, I'm damned. If i do the other, it's against my 'nature'. Why couldn't I be the one dead?! Why did NenTar have to miss? Is this some sort of 'divine' doing? Why? WHY DAMNIT?! WHY?!!

\*\*\*

6:12 p.m. (still yesterday)

'What are you doing?!' screamed a voice inside, 'Idiot! You're wasting it!'

The water poured on her, freezing cold and feeling like knives against her bare skin. All the hot water for showers was turned off at 3:02, so she was out of luck for a relaxing wash. "I'm not a monster." she replied, washing the blood off her neck. "I don't need it."

'But you want it.' the voice countered. 'You know you do.'

"Want and need are two different things." she growled. "And it's disgusting." Jazmyn poured more soap into her hair. The foam turned pinkish orange as it fell on the tiled floor. "I will not take dead blood of the innocent. It's wrong."

'Why do you care if it's wrong?! IT'S NATURE!!' Her temples pounded, her head began to hurt. The voice quieted down, and went to slumbering in the back of her mind. Jazmyn began scrubbing under her nails, arms, face, anywhere and everywhere the blood had touched her skin. More ice cold water just flooded on her, as if to wash away her sins.

"Who were you talking to?" asked a voice. She went ridged, and looked over her shoulder at him. "This is the boy's locker room, you know?"

Jazmyn looked at Chase blankly, like a deer in headlights. "And as you can see, I'm busy." she said. Jazmyn's hand grabbed at whatever she could and threw it at him. His hand was around her throat and he had her pinned against the wall. "You bastard!" she snarled. "You wouldn't!"

"Oh wouldn't I?" his voice trailed off. Looking down at her wet frame. "It's not like there's anything you can--" BAM!! He was facedown on the floor, with someone's foot on the back of his head.

"I am truely sorry for my classmate's actions, Miss Lun." Lao said, holding out a towel for her. "He will be disciplined accordingly." He was facing away from her, instead, glaring down at Chase. Lao Jiang reached down and grabbed Chase's feet and dragged him out like a broken wheelbarrel. "My apologies this meeting wasn't a pleasant one. Fair well."

\*\*\*

present day

Mercedes 7:00 p.m.

Mana kicked Burn, the girl barely had time to react. She somersaulted out of the way. The shot missed, but Burn felt her muscles cramp up around the area. "Damn!" She staggered, regaining her stance seconds later.

Mana looked out the window, with every passing minute the Sun crept lower and lower behind the horizon. She ran her fingers through her black hair. Her uniform was in disarray, she looked a little tossed. Burn on the other hand, had a torn sleeve and bloodied knuckles. Her violet eyes as hostile as Mana's crimson ones. Logan grabbed Burn's hand and Pipit grabbed her arm. They pulled her in the other direction away from Mana.

"What the hell are you guys doing?!" she shouted. "I need to beat her!"

Pipit's blue eyes looked at Burn. "She's stronger than you!" she said, her voice worried. "Mana isn't even using half her strength."

Logan saw something ahead of them. He let go of Burn's arm, but shoved them ahead. He turned around to face Mana. She came running, ready to grab him. Logan clapped his hands and touched the wall. Transmutation symbols appeared, and enclosed Mana. Jolts of what looked like electricity went through her. He tensed up and the power became thicker.

She smiled. "My! You've learned a new trick!" Mana's hands went out, and parted the energy as if they were nothing but curtains. "Too bad I've seen it before."

Pipit was on the verge of tears, but she held them back. She got in front of Burn. "Dazai Dezei!" Pipit shouted. Thousands of blue feathers appeared and speared Mana. The sparrow grabbed Logan's hand. "That won't hold her for long!"

Burn was being pulled by the two children. She looked at them, like they were crazy. "You didn't have to kill her!" she said, breathless.

Logan and Pipit stopped, to look at her. "Mana's a Diablo." said Pipit. "And Diablos don't die."

"Thasssss right Maya-Anak!" Mana's hand went out and grabbed Pipit's head. Her nails turned into claws, leaving a bloody mark on the girl's forehead. "Now that one really threw me off! You knew Dazai Dezei?" The bloodied Mana laughed, squeezing Pipit's skull a little. "Remember, Anak...You made me do this."

Burn stepped between Logan and Mana. "Let her go." she said, her voice void of all emotion. Mana glared at Burn, telling her no. Something inside told Burn to fight. Fight harder than she ever fought before. "Sashiku."

Her ears became pointed, and the black tips of her hair turned purple. Her nails turned into claws, that looked perfectly manicured, rounded but sharp, and a long bushy tail. Her body altered from that of a fifteen year old to that of a nineteen year old. She opened her eyes and yawned. "God! That was a frackin' long nap." she said. She looked at Mana then Pipit. Her fist hit Mana, making her drop Pipit and

hit the tiled floor. "When i tell ya to let go. You do it!" She glanced over at Pipit and Logan. "What are you doing?! Run!"



## 27 - Moon Light Shadow

### chapter twentytwo: Moon Light Shadow

When you're at the penacle of happiness, at the top. You know, there's always someone to kick you down.

"What have you done?!"

"It wasn't my fault!"

"...Death is natural... causing death is unnatural."

"Bye bye, big brother! I'll miss you!"

"Where's my son?! Where's my daughter?! Where are my children?!"

And the last time she ever saw him, he was carried away by a moonlight shadow.

\*\*\*

"Well, now that you ain't facing those little pipsqueaks." Sashiku grinned. "We can get started now can't we?" She cracked her knuckles loudly.

"Hmm..." Mana pushed her black hair away from her face. "My My My... What are you? You can't be a second born... or even a third born for that matter." She scratched her head. Then a thought struck her. "A reincarnette?"

"Dinga linga ling!" Sashiku's left ear twitched. She ran at Mana. Her arm pulled back for a punch, Mana blocked. Sashiku faked her out and kicked her. Mana went tumbling, stopping when she hit the end of the hall. "There's your prize."

Mana sat on her side, her arms pushing her up. She rubbed her chin. "Wow." She cracked her jaw back into place. "Quite a shot ya got there." The sun disappeared under the black horizon. Mana began laughing. Insideous and evil. Her black hair turned chalk white, claws jutted out her fingers, breaking apart her nails. Loud cracks and pops came from her bones as she began to morph.

Sashiku ran for her. Her leg raised for a kick, and brought it down on her side between her ribs and her hips. Blood splattered on the floor, and the wox girl jumped back. "What the hell?!" Mana lay there, torn in two. "shoot... I didn't think I hit her that hard..."

"You didn't." Mana laughed. Her arms went out and her upperbody balanced on them. Like a second pair of legs. Two batlike wings jutted out her back, webbed with torn leather like skin. "And now that you've seen my true form... You'll have to die."

"So you were that thing that tried to take Logan?" Sashiku yawned. "You're hideous if i do say so myself."

Mana grinned, showing off all her razor teeth. "Why thank you. And may i ask what my next meal is? A wolf? A kitsune? A neko? What?" Her wings opened, smashing through the windows. "All you disgusting halfbreeds are starting to look the same to me!"

Sashiku growled, her teeth grinding against eachother. "A neko?!" She disappeared. Sashiku suckerpunched Mana, sending her through the windows and into the empty courtyard. "I'm a wox. A rarity among most; a fox-wolf hybrid." Sashiku somersaulted and did a rollout kick on the vampire known as Mana. Her head went at an angle that would have shattered a spine. "And don't you forget it!"

Her head snapped back into place, a hiss escaping her mouth. "I'll remember that..." she hissed, "When I'm picking your flesh out of my teeth."

\*\*\*

Counselor's Office (yes they have one of those)

"It's after seven." she groaned. "Do i really need to talk about my problems?"

The Counselor nodded. She adjusted her glasses and opened a folder. "Says here you punched two students, kicked a third... and head butt an Alejandro... all in a matter of minutes?"

Jazmyn shrugged. "Well now that you've gotten the facts you need. I should leave." She began to stand up from the chair, but the counselor cleared her throat.

"It also says here... One of them said something about your parents?" she inquired. Jazmyn jumped up and began for the door. It was locked. "Your teachers say your grades have dropped significantly, and that you lack focus." She put the files on her lap, and folded her hands on top of them. "Care to share your thoughts on the matters?"

She looked over her shoulder at her. "If I'm such a nuisance, why don't you guys just expell me?" Jazmyn thought for a moment. "No... because you're all wondering what I'll do next. If I'll go bad, and rot the rest of the crop, or if let go, cause mass murders like the rest of my kind." Her shoulder's slacked, her hand dropping from the door. "I've been woundering that same thing the past week."

"And what about your parents? Where do they fit in with your furocious attitude towards all the other students?" She wrote something on the file, then looked back at Jazmyn. "How do you think Mr. and Mrs. Lunn would feel? Seeing you act this way?"

Jazmyn laughed. "You didn't read the entire file did you?!" she snapped. "Because if you did, you would have read I'm from an orphanage. I picked my own name.... Which you are mispronouncing. It's Lun, like the Luna? Okay?"

"What about Miaruko--" The door's lock was broken and she was gone.

\*\*\*

Elen, Chrystal, Invidia, and Lee were walking around after hours, when they saw Logan and Pipit come running up the hall. Pipit tripped and clutched to Lee's uniform. Logan gasped for breath, leaning against the wall to regain his balance. Lee looked at Pipit then Logan. "What's wrong?" she asked.

"Mana...she's a demon...! And she... wants to... take... Logan away!" said Pipit in between breaths.

\*\*\*

Sashiku was thrown into the air with a shout. Her eyes shut tight with pain, but in seconds they were open. Mana surged at her, claws ready to tear her apart. The wox girl smiled. While in the air, she flipped and brought a foot down on Mana's head. Snapping it forward and causing her to fall towards the earth.

"We woxes are marvelous creatures. Looks of both species, but our skills are like that of a cat's." Sashiku sneered.

Mana's claws dug at the ground, pulling herself up out the ditch. "I didn't want to fight you." She grinned, all her razor teeth showing. "But my my my! What fun I'm having!"

Sashiku landed with grace. She stood in a stance. Sashiku tensed, and felt her muscles around her abdominal suddenly contract. "Nani?!"

"Wondering when it would kick in!" Mana laughed. The area where her body had separated, the base of her spine/tailbone had formed into a stinger. "Doesn't hurt for the best couple seconds. But after that..." She looked over at Sashiku, grinning like a maniac. Sashiku let out an agonized scream. "But once it does, it's like hell." She fell to her knees, her hands holding her stomach. All throughout Sashiku's body, her muscles were spazzing and contracting uncontrollably. "My venom works just like a jellyfish's... only faster."

"dog!" Sashiku snarled, trying to stand up.

"It goes straight to the nerves, and makes red blood cells burst." Mana said. Her wings opened, then she flew at the woxgirl. Next thing Sashiku heard, was Mana's shrill scream. "frackIN HELL!!"

Sashiku's vision blurred, but she saw who it was. A woman dressed in a white dress, and pale lavender ribbons. Her left hand's ribbon like gloves had transformed into a bow. An energy blast ready to be fired like an arrow. "This has gone on long enough." she said. She looked at Sashiku from the corner of her eye. "My apologies, Miss Burnidette. That you had to be subjected to such filth."

Mana was missing her right arm, and wing, and lay gushing blood in the grass. "dog..." she gurgled. Her eyes became completely red, iris, pupil, cornea, all were consumed in crimson. "DIE!!"

Evelyn let the arrow fly. When it made contact with the vampire, she ceased to exist. Her molecules were torn apart, and burned into nothing. Evelyn slacked, her weapon folding back into ribbon. She looked at Sashiku. Kneeling down in front of her, Evelyn's hand went out. Her gloved hands touched the

wound, blood soaking into the silk. She whispered something in an ancient language. Sashiku's eyes closed, and she collapsed.

\*\*\*

The Next day

Burn woke up in her dorm. She sat up, and looked around. "God...my head..." she mumbled. Burn climbed out of bed, and walked to the bathroom to do her morning chores. Brush her teeth, comb her hair, wash her face, etc. When she was changing out of her pajamas, she noticed a bruise on her side. It wasn't that big a deal, but dark enough for her to see it.

"Must of gotten hit during Phys. Ed. yesterday." she mumbled.

\*\*\*

"Oh my god! Did you see the north hall?" asked one girl.

"Yeah! It's a total mess!" said another.

"Bet you they're gonna blame us." Kaj whispered to Elen.

Elen shrugged. "Maybe, maybe not." She put her hands behind her head as she walked. "Want to go see the North Hall?"

Kaj nodded. "Just to show our innocence."

\*\*\*

"Thought you said we shouldn't get involved?" Jessie inquired.

"I said you guys to not get involved." Evelyn replied. Jessie floated over to Evelyn. "You girls tend to go all out, and if you missed you'd be left with a very pissed Mana."

Jessie studied Evelyn, her ivy eyes narrowed at her. "You may be the strongest, but you're still the youngest." said Jessie. "What if Nen felt that attack? Or even worse, Diane?"

Evelyn smiled sweetly. "Let me worry about that."

Jessie sighed loudly. "I don't think MeiLin would be happy if you're happy..." She held her head and shouted. "You all make me so angry! You keep doing this crap without thinking!"

Evelyn laughed. She gave Jessie's sideways ponytail a gentle tug. "Umhmm... whatever." she said. "I just don't like it when people are in pain."

"Then why don't you ask Dreamer for that Shen Gong Wu? The Jar of Shin?" Jessie asked. "And return all their memories so we don't have to work so hard! DAMNIT!"

Evelyn hit Jessie, smacking the girl upside the head. "Don't curse. It's unbecoming of a girl you're age."

"I'm a thousand and three." Jessie said.

"Besides... It's not yet time." Evelyn said quietly. "If we unveil the reason before the questions, it may destroy them."

The white haired girl yawned, and floated around on her back. Like she was doing the backstroke in the sky. "Ah yes, the meaning of life. 'To Exist yet not to truely Exist.' Quite a life for an angel." She put her hands out in the air above her. Bright green bubbles came from her finger tips and flew into the abyss known as 'the Heavens'. "Fantastic."

## 28 - Grinnin' like a Manic!

### chapter twentythree: Grinnin' like a Maniac

"HeIIIIlo!" Pipit said, sitting on Jazmyn's head. "Whatcha doin'?"

To the teen's surprise, Pipit barely weighed anything. She almost didn't notice her. "Homework." she said.

"Why?" asked Pipit. Leaning over and looking at the papers then in Jazmyn's eyes.

"Because i have to." she responded, looking back at Pipit.

"No." Pipit responded. "Why are you so sad?" Pipit gently gripped onto Jazmyn's hair so she wouldn't slip off. "Is it because of Sister MeMe?"

Jazmyn sighed. She wasn't going to get her work done with this little Fallen hovering around her. "Why don't you go hangout with Logan? Or Kaj?"

"I wanna hangout with you." Pipit snuggled her head. Then she slid forward and sat on the desk. "Stop being sad! Please? Let out all those bad feelings out. So all that's left are smiles!"

"Um...yeah...Well I'm not sad." Jazmyn said, standing up. "I'm going for a walk and--"

"But Zizi-neesama!" said the girl. "You keep shunning your responsibilities, you're going to get nowhere." Jazmyn turned to see a black haired, pink irised, and olive skinned preteen. She wore a verve sector uniform, and sitting on top of Jazmyn's papers and desk. Miaruko Sol picked up the papers and looked them over. "This doesn't look so hard. Do you want me to help?"

"STOP IT! STOPITSTOPITSPOTIP!" Jazmyn shouted. She picked up a text book and threw it at the desk. It crashed into her other books, causing them all to clatter on the floor. Pipit immediately turned back to her normal form. Tears in her eyes, she turned away from Jazmyn.

"You're mean!" she shouted back. Pipit turned into a sparrow and flew out the window. "I hate you!"

Jazmyn cursed herself. She opened the window fully and jumped out. Landing, she didn't break a sweat and ran after Pipit. Jazmyn had to say she was sorry. The moment of seeing MeMe again, in real life, Jazmyn's heart hurt. Her voice, was so real. It was like she never left... Never...Died.

Pipit hadn't gone far, she was standing against a really big tree, her arms crossed against it and she was crying. She looked back at Jazmyn, tears still streaming her face. "I'm sorry." Jazmyn whispered, not stepping anycloser. "I'm...just really upset..."

Pipit looked back at Jazmyn. "I was trying to make you happy!" she sobbed. "Evelyn said i should do

something nice for you!"

"I don't need anyone--" Jazmyn started, but Pipit shouted back.

"That's your problem! You think you don't need anyone, but you do!" she cried. "People need others so they won't be angry or sad all the time!" She rubbed her eyes roughly, "So...Suh-so you won't become a baddie! An empty!"

Jazmyn remembered hearing that phrase before. "...You're scared for the damnation of my soul?" Pipit nodded her head quickly, tears still streaming down her face. "Why?"

"Because! Sister MeMe loved you!" Pipit cried.

Jazmyn walked up to Pipit, she put her hand out and Pipit flinched. The vampire smiled and patted her on the head. Pipit opened her eyes, looking at Jazmyn. She was smiling, her eyes no longer angry, or frightened. "Thanks." she murmured. "It's very nice... of all of you trying to make me feel better... but lately... I just feel... so hollow inside...like i have no purpose."

"Don't say that!" the child hicced. "Everyone has a purpose! Ellie-chan! Kaj-chan! Vivi-chan! Meme-chan! Everyone has a purpose!"

Jazmyn felt so tired. She fell to her knees, then collapsed on the grass. Her head turned sideways, and Pipit could see she was crying. Tears just started pouring out her eyes uncontrollably. And she told the Fallen everything. About MeMe's death, the Accusations against her, the Breed known as Aswang, her mother, everything. Pipit knelt down and pulled her head into her lap.

"I would have to say... you were made to live. And your purpose..." Pipit smiled, her silver-blue eyes glowing. "Is to do what you want. I never said your purpose was predestined. I mean.. it is... but there are multiple ways to get there... like chutes and ladders."

"Aww. Isn't that cute?" sneered a voice. "Is that how you think the world works, Maya?" Pipit's head snapped up, to look at someone. She was shaking a little. Jazmyn's hand gripped Pipit's tightly. She knew that voice. "ECLAIR!!"

White lightning struck the ground where they once were. He was disappointed to see they weren't burned into piles of charcoal. "Yo, 'sup Nen?" asked Jazmyn, grinning like a maniac. She held Pipit in her arms, an odd new found strength inside of her. She turned to the child in her grasp. Then back to NenTar. "You still wanna fight me? I mean i don't have either of my swords, so it'd be a big advantage for you, an Angel, with a powerful weapon like Eclair. To attack little ol' me. A halfbreed, unarmed, and barely of age. Quite an advantage, wouldn't you agree?"

NenTar grinned, brushing his onyx bangs away from his face. "Isn't that the point?"

\*\*\*

1729-Chekiang, China (i don't know many chinese words, so i'm going to have direct translations of some of the names, or very cliché names)

She stood in her room, just looking out at the rain covered streets. She opened the windows to their full extent so she could reach out and touch the water. She hated this hellhole, a prisoner because of her lack of papers and money. A refugee who barely knew her own name. Nothing, just found on the gutters, halfdead, and covered in blood.

Sai. That was the name she chose for herself. A servant tapped on the door, "Miss Sai, a customer has requested you entertainment."

"I'll be right down." Sai replied. She checked herself in the looking glass and found herself presentable to company. Sai opened the door and walked down the stairs. She stood before them, and as the orchestra began to play, she sang. When it ended, she bowed, and retreated for the night. She sat at the window, looking out at the rain. So peaceful. She leaned against the windowsill, trying to sleep to the sound of falling rain.

The door to her chambers opened. Sai's head snapped up to look at him. She stood up, "You are not aloud up here!" He shut the door and the sound of it locking made Sai back up. "Get out!" she said, trying to sound furious, but sounding more like a mouse.

He said nothing. The 'customer' came closer, making Sai back up against the window's ledge. When he came too close, she tried to run, only to have him grab her from behind. He tugged off her clothes and began to kiss her. "No!" she cried, feeling helpless. "Please! Stop it!" He didn't. He undid the top of her dress, leaving her half naked. The man proceeded to kiss and grope her. "STOP IT!!!"

\*\*\*

Sai ran out her room, and into another part of the manor. A servant found her, covered in blood, and in a ruined dress. "Miss Sai! What happened?!"

The Lady of the Manor came, and asked Sai what had happened. "Well?"

She pulled her legs closer to her chest, and yanked her torn sleeve up to cover herself. "I only sing! That is all I do!" she snapped. "I do not service anyone. Other than my voice, no one is to touch me!" The Lady knelt to Sai, and checked her wounds. There weren't any. "What sort of treachery is this, Sai?!" She held out her hand, showing Sai the crimson that painted her hands. Her eyes grew wide with terror. She walked over to Sai's room to find a man. Lying dead, killed by what looked like multiple stabs with a spear. Lady Yue wiped the blood on his clothes, and walked out. "We're going to have to dispose of the body. There's going to be some flooding near the river. Just dump him there."

"Yes Milady." the servant bowed and went to retrieve others to help get rid of the body.

Yue knelt to Sai. She gently undid the dress and looked at her back. Sai quivered under her touch, and Yue saw her spines recede back into her skin. Like the quills of a porcupine. "So...you're one of them..." Yue sighed. "As long as you keep calm, and don't hurt anyone, I'm sure we can keep this a secret."

Sai turned to look at Yue. "MeiLin. Clean Miss Sai up, and get her some clean clothes."



\*\*\*

present day.

Evelyn was asleep, her molecules separate so she just looked like a thin mist cloud. Her mind screamed when she felt the aura of the man. First her hands formed, then her arms, head and chest, until her whole body was there. She looked around. "Jessie! Where's Pipit?!" she shouted.

Jessie yawned loudly. "Hanging around Jazmyn I think." Lightning cut through the sky, miles away from the two. "Holy...! That can't be...!"

"Eclair." Evelyn breathed. "Damn him to hell." Her wings opened to their full extent. "Chica, looks like our plans have been sped up."

\*\*\*

"Urm... wow." Kaj touched the wall, then empty space where a wall used to be. Torn out plaster, wood and other materials littered the floor and the court yard down below. "Never seen anything like this."

Elen used her foot to lift up a piece of wood and look underneath. Shreds of a verve Sector uniform were tattered and had speckles of blood. "Must have been some fight."

Kaj traced her hand over the claw marks in the marble floor. A talon stuck out from the floor a foot away. "...that can't be..." She remembered the harpie-thing that tried to take Logan away. It had the same type of claws... and in a small area like this, the damage looked just about right. 'But... i killed it. Nothing was left... so what the hell's going on in this school?'

"Ladies, don't you have class?" asked Haruka Satou. "Wouldn't want to be late, now would we?"

"No, Ma'am." Kaj and Elen left to fifth hour. Kaj looked back at Haruka. 'How was someone so young a teacher at this school?' Kaj shrugged and made it back to class. 'She's got to be older than she looks... way older.'

Haruka sighed. "God Mana, can't even grab little runt Angel and Halfbreed." She waved her hand and the walls rebuilt themselves and the windows grew back to their original form. The clawed up floor flattened out like nothing had happened. "Father is not going to be very pleased."

\*\*\*

"LUMIERE!" Another blast rattled through the ground, tearing up the trees and turning them to ash. "Hold still you little leech!"

Jazmyn barely dodged the attack. "God! I lose more uniforms this way!" she laughed. Yes. that's right, she was laughing. Had any of the other girls seen her they would all agree. Jazmyn Lun had lost her mind. She had not offense, and hardly any defense.

Nen backed up. Assuming she had something up her sleeve, or even back up from one of those damned 'teachers'. NenTar saw no one, and felt no other aura. He brought Eclair up and swung at her.

She ducked, and a full five inches of her hair was cut off. Jazmyn's hand brushed against his shirt, and a blast sent them in different directions.

Nen looked to see Pipit, her hands out ready to attack. Neon blue feathers hovering around. She was quaking and terrified to make another attack. "Big brother.... stop it!"

Nen's silver hair went on end. "How dare you..." He swung at Pipit. "CALL ME THAT!" he shouted. The attack was cancelled out when Pipit used Dazai Dezei as a shield. The blast sent her back into a tree. "You were denounced of the title 'sister', when you made friends with creatures like her." Nen pointed the saber at Jazmyn. Pipit attempted to stand up.

"By titles and laws... is that why we exist? To take orders?! Never doing what we feel is right?!" The child shouted. "Killing isn't right! No matter who it is! It hurts others... and takes a small part of ourselves to hell."

Nen became infuriated with the Fallen. He ran for her, and kicked her into the ground. "Andelle! You have become so lowly as to question someone who outranks you?!" He kicked her again. "ANSWER ME ANDELLE!!" Pipit gurgled out a response, slurred because of the pain she was in. Her blue silver eyes shown with tears, begging him to stop. Nen raised Eclair, ready to finish her.

Jazmyn came at him, catching his sword with both her hands. The saber burned her hands, and the strike went through her. Cutting Jazmyn's sleeve, and butchering her shoulder. "I won't let you." she murmured. Blood and tears covered her face. The skin on her hands darkened to black, and her nails became red talons. "Not another one."

\*\*\*

Jessie appeared at the school's vault. She looked at the massive door, then at the bells hanging near by. Jessie rubbed her head, "Geez.. what was the combination?... It's been so long..."

"Nice to see you again, Lelola." said a voice. Jessie turned to see Dreamer, leaning against the wall smiling at her. "Never thought we'd meet after what happened to GalaTea."

"Never thought I'd see the Great Goddess of Phantasy on Earth." Jessie tapped the bells in a certain order, hoping the vault would open. It didn't. She tried three more times, but to no avail. "Good grief... what did you do? Change it?"

Dreamer smirked at her. She stood off the wall and walked over to the vault. "Keeping the same combination for a thousand years could let anyone in." She tapped a different order than Jessie. And the vault creaked open.

"Especially with the students you keep." Jessie said. "You're really asking for it, you know that?" Jessie and dreamer walked down the spiralling staircase, passing shelves and shelves of Shen Gong Wu. "Where's the Jar of Shin?"

"Why would you want that one? I think the YinYang Yo-Yo would be more sufficient." said Dreamer. "Be able to bring Kuya and A-te out if you use the Ring of nine Dragons with it."

"If none of the students remember who they really are, then you're going to be in big trouble." Jessie sighed. She saw the Shen Gong Wu on a shelf above her head. Jessie floated to it and picked it up. It was a small blue and silver jar, with little symbols all over it. "And of all people you actually kept your husband here?"

"He has nice hair" Dreamer shrugged. "Why does that matter?"

They turned and began up the staircase again. "Things have gotten too out of hand." When they were at the top Jessie bowed to her. "when i release their memories, watch out for the Heylin Trio. I'm sure they'll be the most pissed off of them all."

\*\*\*

Haruko Satou stopped and stood at the window, looking at the light show. "Well damn them to hell and back. Sending a cleaning crew to get rid of them."

A wolf-like chimera stepped forward. "what would you like us to do, Master?"

"...if Nen is trying to rid the world of the Shadows... then i guess we had better speed up our plans too." Haruko's deep brown hair turned black and her aqua eyes turned a dark violet blue. She also grew a few years younger. Like the age of a Sophomore. Her kitsune features changed to make her look like a normal student. Her ears were slightly pointed, but just enough so she looked more elflike than animal. "Get the others and execute anyone and everyone who is a threat."

"Most of the numbers have no memories of the wars." the chimera spoke. "Only a small percentage are relative threats."

Ruka Aotuo smirked. "Well enforce those that want to live." she said simply. She kept looking out the window at the fight, white lightning and lavender fire lit up the sky. "...So she's back... interesting."

\*\*\*

As Jessie started making her way back to the courtyard, something attacked her. The chimera tore open her arm, practically ripping it out of it's socket. The angel sent currents of moving molecule's through the creature's skull, splatting chimera matter all over the doorway. A few dozen others came, baring fangs and claws that looked like they'd rip her to shreds.

Jessamine reached in her pocket and pulled out the Shen gong Wu. "JAR OF SHIN!" As she shouted this out, Jessie was taken down by seven chimeras at once. "sonnovabetch!" she screamed, her right arm completely severed. The Shen gong Wu fell and was shattered on the ground. The fallen's arm regrew, and she grinned at them.

"Master has wanted you're head on a plater for centuries! LeLoLa." snarled a chimera with a human body, but jackel characteristics.

"Who? the dog Ruka Aotuo?" she grinned. As another chimera lept at her, Jessie shoved a handful of

recharged particals down it's throat. The result was explosive. Her white and green outfit now ruined, the fallen looked at the chimera. "She's been causing alot of problems for me and mis Hermanas."

"She plans to please Master, with the return of his son and daughter." the chimera replied.

Jessie blinked. "...You've got to be kidding me." she muttered. "This entire time... She was working for--"

The Chimera nodded. "Why else would all this go down? here? Of all places?" The Jackal came at Jessie, striking her and sending her into the wall. "Now that we've secured Mster's Daughter, tell us, where is his son?"

Jessie struggled to stand. She stood with grace and dignity, dusting off her skirt like it was a bug that had laded on her. "You ask me like i know?" she gave him a cocky laugh. "Didn't you here? He left before your precious Ruru came. Kazemaru." Jessie's hands went out, grasping the iv green frame that was her weapon. A lance with blade shaped like a bird's wings spread for flight. With one swing, most of the creatures coming at her were slashed to pieces. "Don't know where the hell he is. And if i did i wouldn't tell. Oh, and just so you know?" Jessie pointed Kazemaru at the broken shards of the Wu. "I finished using it long before it broke. So it really... Really.... Really! Sucks to be you."

\*\*\*

Evelyn flew at Nen, closing in her wings at the right moment and spinning into a rollout kick. He jumped back, evading her strike. The two looked like polar opposites, though their clothes were completely white, it was the other details like the color of their eyes and pendants contrasted.

"Ev-eh-lyn." he stretched out her name. "nice to see you again. Little Evie-kins. I could have sworn Diane killed you personally."

"You can't kill time." she spoke. Ribbons were wrapped around her arms and legs, looking like elegant silken gloves and boots. On the back of her hands, center of her chest, and forehead, "Which is exactly what Diane made me the master of."

Nen charged at her. The ribbons around her right arm reacted, morphing in a sword. In seconds she had blocked with her sword. A rapier style blade, whose hilt and handle were tinted lavender. "Too bad it was short lived." NenTar's saber glowed. "Lumiere."

"LaGrimas!" Evelyn shouted. The two weapons' energy collided, cancelling them out. The counterraction of energy pulled in, then pushed them outward. Evelyn used the gem on her left arm to form a shield, protecting herself, Pipit and Jazmyn. "Maya-anak." she said, not looking at the young reaper. "Get Jazz-anak out of here. ASAP."

Pipit struggled to stand. She hobbled over to Jazmyn and grabbed her hand. The vampire's arms were covered in black skin. Completely onyx colored flesh that was darker then her uniform. She glared at the child, telling her to refrain from contact.

"We have to go!" Pipit said teary eyed. "I don't want to lose any more sisters!"

Jazmyn's body slacked a little. She took Pipit's hand and they began to run back to the school. From the corner of his eye, Nen saw this. "THE HELL YOU ARE!" He shouted. A speared formed with the flick of his wrist. "I'LL SLAY ALL THREE OF YOU!!"

It was thrown at Evelyn. Her shield couldn't hold off the lightning and the spear, so it automatically broke. Evelyn was able to dodge.

"MAYA! JAZMYN!" she shouted. The girl made a sickening scream as the head of the spear went through her ribs, just above her waist. Practically nailing her to the tree. Her hand's weakly scrambled to pull it out, but her own blood made it difficult and unrelenting. Evelyn turned back to Nen, her eyes furious.

\*\*\*

"...Welcome to the magic news network! your only access to magic news. Here, at the Campases of Mercedes' and Alejandro's, there was what looked to be a massacre. At least three hundred students wounded, fifty six students missing and eighty nine dead, including the of the schools: Philip Aran and Theodora Aran . Yet has been revealed on the critical details. Such as who did this and how this all happened..." The television droned on as all across the world, families watched in horror as they were told of the disastrous events that unfolded at there schools. Magical users of the world, grew scared, wondering the same thing...

"How the hell could this have happened? Mercedes and Alejandro were two of the top five schools in the three dimensions!"

and more importantly...

"What can we do...? So this doesn't happen again?"

\*\*\*

...seven months later....

The Acting Dean sat in her chair, looking over papers of transfers and other important things. She waved her hand and a cup floated over to her. She sipped the crimson liquid, sighing at the delicious taste. Metallic, yet Sweet.

"Excuse me... Miss Lun?" a voice piped up.

"Come in." said the Dean. "What is it, Leah?"

"These letters arrived for you this morning." said Leah, placing the pack of envelopes on the desk. "Is there anything else you'll be needing?" The Dean shook her head. Leah bowed then left.

Dean Jazmyn Lun turnd to look out the window. "My My My." she smiled out her coffee mug of blood. "This was easier then i thought."

## 29 - So... This is GoodBye?

last chapter. :D

chapter twentyfour: So... this is, GoodBye?

"Heh heh." Nen smirked. "dog shoulda dodged." He summoned another weapon. A doublesided sword. He sent it flying aiming for her chest. More blood came out of her, more pain surged through her body. "I see my work here is done." As he turned to leave, he heard her cackling.

"Yuh...you asshole...!" she choked out. "You.....fracking.... asshole!" Jazmyn lifted up her head, her golden eyes laced with bloody tears. Her hands moved to reveal the sword wasn't in the center of her chest, but surged in her right breast, going through her lung. "You missed." She spat. Jazmyn pulled a dagger from her thigh. She stabbed herself, through her breast bone and into her heart. "....I....win..."

\*\*\*

2 years later

'Jazmyn Lun' was on. Wearing a Verve Sector suit. She looked as though she had aged years, somewhere in her midtwenties. Anu wasn't really interested in what the fraud had to say, she just wanted to see how she looked. They had changed her looks greatly; red eyes, twenty-something, a Verve and short black hair that barely touched her shoulders. Not that anyone would have noticed. The world didn't know who she was until after the attacks on Alejandro and Mercedes.

As Anu was sipping her tea and finishing the morning's crosswords, Jazmyn's words began to sting in her ears. "...And Mercedes will no longer be a place for demons to scheme and become threats to the major population. But somewhere where we can learn from our mistakes, and defend ourselves--" Kulani turned off the television, then felt the buld growing on his head.

"You didn't have to hit me so hard twerp!" he snarled. Anu stood up. The warm humid weather made her skin prickle. "I'm going to visit my mom." she said, walking out the door.

\*\*\*\*

Jazmyn walked past the students, they greeted her accordingly without aproblem. She gave the girls a warm smile then went back to her work. Her assistant, who looked only 18-19 years old, walked next to her, reading off things that need to be done. She pushed her pink hair back, and kept reading. She stopped where she stood, and stared out the window.

"Dean." she snapped. Jazmyn looked out the window to see a bunch of Alejandro students blocking someone in a cloak.

"Let's just see where this is going." Dean Lun replied.

\*\*\*

"Demon!" shouted an upperclassman. "Where the hell do you think you're going?!" The boy turned and sent a wave of lightning at the figure. She turned her hand up, and the electricity was tossed aside.

"Puh-lease! Is that all you got?" she laughed. Another attack came from behind. This time rocks jutted from the ground, spearing her. But she was too quick. "Awww! My coat!" she whined. "You bullies tore my hood!" The girl frowned, her orange eyes glaring at them. She had black hair that reached to the center of her back, and had burnt orange tips. She had tan skin, that was warm honey-olive. The demon girl was cute, attractive, she looked like she might be 14-15 years of age. "I've got no quarrel with you twerps," she said cocking her hips. She pointed towards the school. The exact spot where Dean Lun and her Assistant, Miruko Sol, stood. "Just those fakers."

Jazmyn and Mia appeared a few feet away. "Who the hell are you?"

"Oh cooome oooooon!" she groaned. "Don't i look the least bit familiar?!"

"Mercedes isn't a place for demons!" shouted the boy who shot lightning at her.

she turned her head to look at them. She gave them a charming smile. "Watch who you're callin' a demon, punk."

"Mia, take care of this problem." Jazmyn said.

Mia nodded. She came at the orange haired girl, and launched a kick at her. She was shocked when the demon flipped her and pinned her to the ground. Mia's arm was pulled into a pressure lock, the girl's legs over her chest pressing down, and her hands around her wrist. The Judo move threatened to break her elbow. She gave a surprised yelp, but that was it.

"Come on! It's just Judo!" the demon laughed. Mia's hand crackled and she shot off a blast of fire. The white fire missed her head, but she couldn't risk another shot like that. She let go and kicked Mia, sending her skidding across the grass. "You're boring. I thought you'd at least summon a weapon or something. But if you did that you might hurt the boys over there."

"So i guess you'll be leaving?" Jazmyn spoke up.

"Yup." She dusted off her clothes and turned to leave. She looked over her shoulder at them. "By the way. My name's GalaTea."

\*\*\*

Evelyn shook her head. "What was that?" she asked.

"Blah blah blah." Jessie sneered. She closed her eyes and her molecules began to separate. "I'm taking a nap. I don't see the problem in letting Te'a go say hello."

"The problem is--" Evelyn started to scold, but was interrupted by Pipit. She grinned up at Evelyn and the Jessie molecules. Jessie pulled herself together.

"Why are you so happy?" Jessie shot.

Pipit held up the gift she had received. A necklace made of seashells and seaglass. "Lookie what MaMa-Anu gave me!" she laughed. Jessie was a little Jealous of Pipit. She would have snatched it and looked at it closely, but Pipit was the generous type. "You wanna see, Jessie?"

The fallen passed on her gift to her sister. Jessie looked at it, and held it up to the sun. Light passed through the glass, and shown wonderous colors in her vision. "Wow... Where'd she get it?"

"She made it." Pipit replied. "There's a whole bunch of shells and glass from pirates washed up on the beach where she lives."

Jessie passed the necklace to Evelyn. The woman sighed, and looked at it in the palm of her hand. "...How is Anu?"

"She'sokay." pipit shrugged. "She went to visit you. Right now i imagine she's visiting Mao."

"Mao?" Jessie's pointed ears perked up.

"Harimao." Pipit grinned. "Harimao Maracabay. Infact I'm going to go visit her! You hold onto my present, 'kay?" And with that sparrow teleported away.

\*\*\*

China, Near the Limestone Mountains

Te'a floated around the mountain pass again, then found her target napping in a tree. Ten to twelve feet from the ground. "Hey." Te`a said, sitting next to her. The woman opened one eye to look at her.

"How was it?" the woman asked, stretching a little. Her black hair fell on her face. "Boracay looks so pretty in the Summer. You should come with me next time."

"Yeah. Then we can go swimming. It's wierd back at school." said Te'a. "I mean, you've got to see this Nung Anu!" Anu rolled her eyes. She shifted her weight, then looked off in the distance. "...You could go there if you like."

"Why? What have Jazmyn and Mia done now?" Anu asked, pulling herself closer to the tree's body.

"Expelled all the SD students." Te'a sighed. She turned to look where Anu was staring off to. "We're really close to the NoWhere Lands... That's his territory." Te'a scooted closer to Anu. "Do you wanna go see him? Your... 'Lover'?"

Anu stuck out her tongue. "I'm sure his wife would have a fit. Besides, that fling is done with." Anu ruffled Te'a orange and black hair. "I like this look better. You look so grown up."



"Heh heh." Te'a grinned. "Orange is a lot better than pink."

"MAAAAMAAA!" Anu and Te`a both looked up to see a blue blur falling from the sky. Head straight for them. Pipit collided with the pair, breaking the branch and surging into the ground. They made contact with a thunderous "KRAK!"

"owie...!" Pipit screamed. She brightened up when she saw Anu and Te'a. "I missed you so much!!"

"Owww!" Te`a said, rubbing her skull. "Gawd! That hurt Maya!"

"Well, I just missed you so much Sister-Mei!" She hugged the teen, laughing nervously. "MaMa-Anu! You know Mercy's really gone to hell. They don't have anymore fun! All the interesting students are gooooooone!"

"Maybe you should go back, and fight her for the job of Dean?" Te'a inquired. "I think you'd make a good Dean. Almost as good as Lady Theodora."

"I can't watch Kulani and RhangLi without screaming bloodymurder, let alone watch a bunch of magically challenged tikes." Anu sighed, standing up.

Pipit stood up, blocking her way. "But they're really bad! And they're training really hard! Like they're planning for a war or something!"

Anu bent down, gently kissing her on the forehead. "Fine. Let's go see it."

\*\*\*

Jazmyn tapped her nails nervously against the desk. "GalaTea..." she growled. "damn it all to hell and back." Miaruko brushed her pink wavy hair away from her face.

"Ma'am." Mia said, her voice almost emotionless. "you have to look at some more of the transfer papers."

"Alright." said Jazmyn, sipping blood from a tea cup. Something flew through the wall, and landing on the table. A dovelike creature cooed, and strutted across her papers. Its red eyes staring at her, studying her movements. "A hellbird? My my my. Haven't seen one of your kind in decades."

In a flash of black fire, the bird turned into an enveloped letter.

"Dear Jazmyn Lun, or whoever the hell you are,

It has come to our attention that you have been asserting your power to lengths that are far beyond your bounds. If you choose to keep this up, we will have no other choice but to rebel in this movement. And be warned, we do know what we're up against. Do you?

Sincerely,

Evelyn Angeles, and RhangLi SunKa"

Jazmyn looked at the letter, it burst into flames in her hands, singeing her finger tips. "Thought we could

do this quietly."

The phone rang and Mia picked it up. She was calm at first, then she exploded. "What?! HERE?! How?!" She growled then slammed down the phone. "Dean... We have a problem."

"What?" she snapped.

"Those two." Mia said, pointing out a window. The orange haired demon was back, this time she was standing with another demon. The two women teleported outside, standing feet away from the pair. "Back for a rematch?"

"Yup. And I brought a partner so you won't get bored Miss Lun." Te'a smirked. She thumbed towards the demon who stood next to her. Practically towering a full two feet over Te'a, Anu grinned. She brushed her fingers through her spiked white hair, her black skin deeply contrasting with it. She was a demon. No doubt about it. Claws, and teeth, hair and skin. She barely looked human aside from the basic features of her body. But the colors, and forming of certain parts threw her off.

"Any reason in particular you chose that student?" Anu asked, her tone bored. "Out of all the witches, sorceresses, mages, animas, elementals, benders, demons, and even Shinigami in training... You chose those two to mimic?"

Jazmyn rolled her eyes. "So what gave us away?" Her black shoulder length hair being blown around by a breeze.

Anu and Te'a came at Jazmyn and Mia. "Easy." Te'a said, sarcastically. "We knew the originals." Te'a flicked her wrist and thousands upon thousands of orange and gold butterflies flew at her. "HEAVENLY STRIKE!" Mia deflected the butterflies, with a barrage of her own. Swarms of ladybugs flew and matched the butterflies. They collided, causing an explosion that sent both parties back. Te'a clapped her hands. And a tambourine like instrument appeared. She tapped her fingers across the top, the metal bells ringing. The ladybugs, broke apart and flew into the wind, becoming nothing but sparkles.

Anu and Jazmyn looked at each other. Anu made a face, then gave her a pucker. "Aren't you a little devious, you little fraud." Jazmyn made a disgusted face.

"What? Were you and Lun intimate?" Jazmyn snapped, her face a little red.

Anu snickered, looking away. "If that's what you wanna call it. Sure. In a way." Anu's white hair turned black, and her black skin turned brown. "But I didn't know her. I Am Her."

Jazmyn looked over at Te'a and Mia. "So then that must be MeMe, hmm?" Her shoulder length black hair became longer in front, and her red eyes turned blue. Her skin tone lightened. Ruko Aoto smiled sweetly at Anu. Anu tensed just in time to dull the shot Ruko dealt her. Anu blocked with her arms, and jumped back, distancing herself from the shapeshifter. "It wasn't that hard you know. Taking over your identities."

Ruko somersaulted, and sent a kick at Anu. The woman's head snapped back, the attack breaking her neck. She turned and spun into a kick, that brought the back of her heel into Ruko's gut. Anu put her arm around her head and popped it back into place. "You think it matters?" she asked. "That identity? That

girl? She was like a character in a play!" Anu turned back into her demon form. "This is what an Ahlun-Awsang looks like." Her claws came at Ruko's throat, but missed. "Te'a!"

"Sig'e?!" she shouted, dodging another magically insect attack.

"We're leaving." Anu said, easing up. Te'a cocked an eye brow at her, but shrugged. Te'a jumped and landed next to Anu. They turned away and were about to leave. Te'a held her hand, as Anu spoke. "Yeah, Ruko, you better rethink that whole war you're planning against the humans, Shadow Division and Verve's Sectors." She looked over Ruko. "And Jazmyn Lun is on the verge of existing."

"How the hell can one be on the 'Verge' of Existance?! You either do, or you don't!" Ruko snarled.

"To exist is made up of two things. Knowing and Being." Anu yawned loudly. "If people know who you are, that's existing. If you are physically here, that's existing. Jazmyn Lun was a name, and a pretty face. A character in a play. And when you remove the people who knew... and the evidence of who she was, you make a whole 'nother person." Anu looked at her ebony skin. "Because that is all we are. That's all anyone is. Memories and Matter. Take either away, and you cease to be." Anu smiled sweetly at Ruko. "You do anything to jeopardize the solid peace, all three sides have accomplished, we won't hesitate to restore it. At any means necessary."

Te'a squeezed Anu's hand impatiently. "It was fun meeting you two." she smiled, and they were gone.

\*\*\*

Evelyn looked up at the sky, quietly waiting for her family. Pipit put on her necklace, and danced around the room, spinning and singing in their Native tongue. A figure appeared next to Evelyn. "...She's grown into quite the woman." he said. "Has your fighting spirit."

"And your instincts." Evelyn said, still watching Pipit. "If you want to talk to Anuranga, or Bacunawa, you're going to have to wait for them."

"I just came to say hello." he replied. "I'm sure that neither of them would be happy to see me." Harimao Semirara scratched his head. "It was nice seeing you again, Eloni." And the ghost was gone.

Pipit came running over. "Are you okay, Evelyn?"

The woman's lavender eyes turned gold. She whiped away a tear, and smiled at Pipit. "Just peachy Maya."

\*\*\*

She lay asleep, curled around two black spheres. The smooth black shells encased two small ahluns. The pups made shallow scratching noises, telling their mother they were awake. Alive. Her mate gingerly nuzzled her neck, she purred out a response. "...They're almost ready to hatch." Anu whispered.

"....Have you thought about names?" Bacunawa asked.

Anu pulled her legs in closer to the young. There was a loud crack, and the shells began to open. After three minute of the hatching process, two ahlun pups sat on the bed, covered in a thin egg membrane. Both girls. With olive skin, and dark hair.... But one had dark brown hair... and the other had black hair, that looked like it was green. The green haired one opened her eyes, and blinked repeatedly to see her. They were orange.

Anu smiled at them, and used a clothe to whipe the membrane off their skin. "Lolita Young Maracabay... And JiangLi-Tsa Maracabay."